



# LUND UNIVERSITY

## **Towards Better Urban Spaces in Harmony with Microclimate: Urban design and planning regulations in hot dry Damascus, Syria**

Yahia, Moohammed Wasim

Published: 2014-01-01

[Link to publication](#)

### *Citation for published version (APA):*

Yahia, M. W. (2014). Towards Better Urban Spaces in Harmony with Microclimate: Urban design and planning regulations in hot dry Damascus, Syria Lund University

### **General rights**

Copyright and moral rights for the publications made accessible in the public portal are retained by the authors and/or other copyright owners and it is a condition of accessing publications that users recognise and abide by the legal requirements associated with these rights.

- Users may download and print one copy of any publication from the public portal for the purpose of private study or research.
- You may not further distribute the material or use it for any profit-making activity or commercial gain
- You may freely distribute the URL identifying the publication in the public portal

LUND UNIVERSITY

PO Box 117  
221 00 Lund  
+46 46-222 00 00

# Towards Better Urban Spaces in Harmony with Microclimate

Urban design and planning regulations  
in hot dry Damascus, Syria

## ***Keywords***

Architecture	Damascus	Thermal comfort
Arid zones	Hot dry regions	Thermal indices
Built environment	Landscape elements	Urban climate
Climate	Microclimate	Urban design
Climatic design	Planning regulations	Urban planning

© Moohammed Wasim Yahia  
Towards Better Urban Spaces in Harmony with Microclimate:  
Urban design and planning regulations in hot dry Damascus, Syria

E-mail: moohammed\_wasim.yahia@hdm.lth.se  
Facebook: Mhd Wasim Yahia

Thesis 10  
ISBN-10 9187866-39-0  
ISBN-13 978-91-87866-39-5

ISSN 1652-7666

Cover Layout: E-husets Tryckeri  
Cover photo, figures, and tables by the author  
Printed in Sweden by E-husets Tryckeri, Lund, 2014

This Thesis can be orderd from  
Housing Development & Management  
Lund University  
Box 118 Telephone +46 46 222 05 05  
SE-221 00 Lund Telefax +46 46 222 47 19  
Sweden E-mail hdm@lth.se  
Homepage <http://www.hdm.lth.se>

# Towards Better Urban Spaces in Harmony with Microclimate

Urban design and planning regulations  
in hot dry Damascus, Syria







*For Syria ..... forever.  
And more than ever.*



*“We need a generation of architects and designers who hold knowledge in their minds and love in their hearts”*

*M.W. Yahia*



# Table of Contents

<b>1</b>	<b>Introduction</b>	<b>19</b>
1.1	<i>Background and problem definition</i>	19
1.2	<i>Aim, research questions and limitations</i>	21
1.3	<i>Structure of the thesis</i>	22
<b>2</b>	<b>The city of Damascus – the area studied</b>	<b>25</b>
2.1	<i>The city of Damascus</i>	25
2.2	<i>Urbanization in Damascus</i>	27
2.3	<i>City development and urban planning regulations in Damascus</i>	29
2.4	<i>Existing urban planning regulations in Damascus</i>	31
2.5	<i>Climate of Damascus</i>	32
<b>3</b>	<b>Literature review</b>	<b>35</b>
3.1	<i>Urban climate, climatic design and thermal comfort</i>	35
3.2	<i>Urban microclimate and outdoor thermal comfort in hot dry climates</i>	37
3.3	<i>Urban planning regulations and climate</i>	43
<b>4</b>	<b>Methodology</b>	<b>47</b>
4.1	<i>Research paradigm</i>	47
4.2	<i>Overall research strategy</i>	49
4.3	<i>Analysis of urban planning regulations</i>	50
4.4	<i>Microclimate fieldwork</i>	53
4.5	<i>Structured interviews</i>	56
4.6	<i>Thermal comfort analysis</i>	57
4.7	<i>Parametric study</i>	58
4.8	<i>Residential area design evaluation</i>	61
<b>5</b>	<b>Results and discussion</b>	<b>67</b>
5.1	<i>The effect of urban regulations on surface temperatures and thermal comfort</i>	67
5.2	<i>Micrometeorological measurements and calculated thermal comfort indices</i>	69
5.3	<i>Subjective thermal sensation</i>	72
5.4	<i>Relationship between thermal sensation votes and thermal indices</i>	73
5.5	<i>Thermal comfort limits and neutral temperatures</i>	75
5.6	<i>Thermal sensation and aesthetic qualities of the place</i>	76
5.7	<i>Landscape interventions in improving thermal comfort in Damascus</i>	77

5.8 Thermal comfort evaluation for an urban design proposal	84
<b>6 Conclusions and propositions</b>	<b>89</b>
<b>References</b>	<b>93</b>
<b>Appendix 1: Urban zones in Damascus</b>	<b>101</b>
<b>Appendix 2: Glossary of terms used in the thesis</b>	<b>103</b>
<b>Paper 1</b>	<b>107</b>
<i>Influence of urban planning regulations on the microclimate in a hot dry climate – The example of Damascus, Syria</i>	
<b>Paper 2</b>	<b>127</b>
<i>Evaluating the behaviour of different thermal indices by investigating various outdoor urban environments in the hot dry city of Damascus, Syria</i>	
<b>Paper 3</b>	<b>155</b>
<i>Urban microclimate and thermal comfort in outdoor spaces in hot dry Damascus</i>	
<b>Paper 4</b>	<b>165</b>
<i>The Influence of Environment on People’s Thermal Comfort in Outdoor Urban Spaces in Hot Dry Climates – The example of Damascus, Syria</i>	
<b>Paper 5</b>	<b>179</b>
<i>Microclimate in hot dry Damascus: The influence of the urban environment on human perception</i>	
<b>Paper 6</b>	<b>195</b>
<i>Landscape interventions in improving thermal comfort in the hot dry city of Damascus, Syria –The example of residential spaces with detached buildings</i>	

# Acknowledgments

In life, everyone has memories that he/she always wants to keep in mind. For me, the time I spent in Sweden to conduct this work was one of the most beautiful in my life, in addition to the nice, polite, and educated people that I met.

First of all, I would like to thank my tutor Dr. Erik Johansson who was for me a main resource to develop my research in the field of urban microclimate and thermal comfort. I also want to thank Mr. Johnny Åstrand, not only because he is a perfect director of HDM, but also because he was my main tutor and encouraged me to develop my work from architectural as well as academic perspectives.

Special thank goes to my supervisor Prof. Björn Karlsson who gave me very valuable advice in the beginning of the work.

I am also grateful to my colleagues at HDM (Laura Liuke, Maria Rasmussen, Ivette Arroyo and Fabricio Montaña) for providing a comfortable environment and for their support throughout the work, and special thanks to the senior administrator Lena Andersson who was ready to do everything I needed and offered everything I asked. Special thanks also to Laura Liuke for the excellent work in editing the English text.

Special thanks to Dr. Thorbjörn Laike, Department of Architecture and Built Environment, Lund University for his advice in the field of environmental psychology that helped me to develop my work.

I would like also to express my gratitude towards Mrs. Beata Sokołowska who helped me to learn some basic statistics and the SPSS software.

I would like to thank my parents, brothers, sisters, friends, and colleagues for their support and for always believing in me.

The financial support provided by the Erasmus Mundus External Cooperation Window Lot 3 and HDM, Lund University, Sweden is greatly appreciated and acknowledged.

Last, but certainly not least, the greatest thank goes to the one who is here and there, the one who lives in eyes and hearts, the one who is the first and the last.





# List of papers and author's contribution

This thesis is based on six papers, which will be referred to in the text. The papers are appended at the end of the thesis.

## **Paper 1**

Yahia, M.W., & Johansson, E. (2013a). Influence of urban planning regulations on the microclimate in a hot dry climate: The example of Damascus, Syria. *Journal of Housing and Built Environment*, 28 (1), 51–65.

M. W. Yahia translated the documents of urban planning regulations from Arabic into English and did investigations of different urban zones. He modeled the related zones with Auto-CAD and simulated microclimate with ENVI-met. In addition, he carried out and analyzed the results and was responsible for all steps for being published in the journal of housing and built environment.

The co-author assisted with the review and critical discussions.

## **Paper 2**

Yahia, M.W., & Johansson, E. (2013b). Evaluating the behaviour of different thermal indices by investigating various outdoor urban environments in the hot dry city of Damascus, Syria. *International Journal of Biometeorology*, 57(4), 615–630.

M. W. Yahia conducted the micrometeorological measurements and structured interviews in Damascus in summer and winter seasons. He also carried out the microclimate and thermal comfort investigations. Furthermore, he conducted and analyzed the results and was responsible for all steps for being published in the international journal of Biometeorology.

The co-author assisted with the review and critical discussions.

## **Paper 3**

Yahia, M.W., & Johansson, E. (2012). Urban microclimate and thermal comfort in outdoor spaces in hot dry Damascus. *The 8<sup>th</sup> International Conference on Urban Climate (ICUC8)*, 6<sup>th</sup>-10<sup>th</sup> August 2012, UCD, Dublin, Ireland.

M. W. Yahia conducted the microclimate and thermal comfort analysis and carried out the results including the statistical analysis by using SPSS software. In addition, all steps to present the written paper in the ICUC8 conference were done by the author.

The co-author assisted with the review and critical discussions.

#### **Paper 4**

Yahia, M.W., & Johansson, E. (2011). The influence of environment on people's thermal comfort in outdoor urban spaces in hot dry climates – The example of Damascus, Syria. *Architecture and Sustainable Development, In: Bodart M and Euvard A (Eds.), Proceedings of the 27<sup>th</sup> international Passive and Low Energy Architecture (PLEA) Conference*, Louvain-la-Neuve, 13<sup>th</sup>-15<sup>th</sup> July 2011, Vol. 1, p. 589–594.

M. W. Yahia conducted the all analysis of the structured interviews and carried out the results by using SPSS. In addition, all steps to present the paper in the PLEA conference were done by the author.

The co-author assisted with review and critical discussions.

#### **Paper 5**

Yahia, M.W., & Johansson, E. (2013c). Microclimate in hot dry Damascus: The influence of the urban environment on human perception. *Journal of Earth Science and Engineering*, 8 (3), 554–561.

M. W. Yahia carried out the thermal comfort investigations. He also produced and analyzed the results by using SPSS software. The author was also responsible for all steps for being published in the journal of Earth Science and Engineering.

The co-author assisted with the review and critical discussions.

#### **Paper 6**

Yahia, M.W., & Johansson, E. (2014). Landscape interventions in improving thermal comfort in the hot dry city of Damascus, Syria – The example of residential spaces with detached buildings. *Landscape and Urban Planning*, (125), 1–16.

M. W. Yahia carried out investigations of different urban zones. He modeled the related zones by using Auto-CAD and simulated microclimate with ENVI-met as a parametric study. In addition, he conducted and analyzed the results and was responsible for all steps for being published in the journal of landscape and urban planning.

The co-author assisted with the review and critical discussions.

## **Additional publications, not included in the thesis**

### **Conference papers**

Yahia, M.W., & Johansson, E. (2012). Thermal perception and physical characteristics of urban spaces in Damascus, Syria. *The 8<sup>th</sup> International Conference on Urban Climate (ICUC8)*, 6<sup>th</sup>-10<sup>th</sup> August 2012, UCD, Dublin, Ireland.

Johansson, E., & Yahia, M.W. (2012). Improving outdoor thermal comfort in warm-humid Guayaquil, Ecuador through urban design. *The 8<sup>th</sup> International Conference on Urban Climate (ICUC8)*, 6<sup>th</sup>-10<sup>th</sup> August 2012, UCD, Dublin, Ireland.

Johansson, E., & Yahia, M.W. (2012). The problem of poor microclimate in urban areas in hot dry climates and analysis of existing urban planning regulations. *The 4<sup>th</sup> International Conference on Municipal Management and Urban Development for Sustainability in Arab Cities*, 7<sup>th</sup>-9<sup>th</sup> May 2012, Kuwait.

Johansson, E., & Yahia, M.W. (2011). Subjective thermal comfort in urban spaces in the warm-humid city of Guayaquil, Ecuador. *Architecture and Sustainable Development*, In: Bodart M and Evrard A (Eds.), *Proceedings of the 27<sup>th</sup> international Passive and Low Energy Architecture (PLEA) Conference*, Louvain-la-Neuve, 13<sup>th</sup>-15<sup>th</sup> July 2011, Vol. I, p. 577–582.

Johansson, E., & Yahia, M.W. (2010). Towards a climate-sensitive urban design- the need to modify current planning regulations. In: Lehmann et al. (Eds.), *Sustainable Architecture and Urban Development (SAUD 2010)*, *Proceedings of the 7<sup>th</sup> International Conference of the Center for the Study of Architecture in the Arab Region*, Amman, Jordan, 12<sup>th</sup>-14<sup>th</sup> July 2010, Vol. II, p. 293–306.

## Licentiate thesis

Yahia, M.W. (2012). Urban Microclimate and Thermal Comfort of Urban Spaces in Hot Dry Damascus: Influence of urban design and planning regulations. *Division of Housing Development & Management, Dept. of Architecture and Built Environment*, Lund University, Lund, Sweden.



# Abbreviations

ASHRAE	American Society of Heating, Refrigerating and Air-conditioning Engineers
ET*	New Effective Temperature
FAR	Floor Area Ratio
H/W	The ratio of building height (H) to street width (W)
IRA	Inhabited Rural Area (zone code)
MRT	Mean Radiant Temperature
OD	Old Damascus (zone code)
OUT_SET*	Outdoor Standard Effective Temperature
PET	Physiological Equivalent Temperature
PMV	Predicted Mean Vote
PRA	Planned Residential Area (zone code)
PT	Perceived Temperature
RH	Relative humidity
SVF	Sky View Factor
Ta	Air temperature
Tg	Globe temperature
UHI	Urban Heat Island
W	Wind speed
Wd	Wind direction



# 1 Introduction

## 1.1 Background and problem definition

Over the last decades, there has been considerable interest in the topics of urban issues and city development. This attention to create better cities – cities that are more livable, sustainable and dynamic – can be noticed in many international scientific meetings and conferences such as the 2<sup>nd</sup> United Nations Conference on Human Settlements (UN-Habitat II, 1996) that discussed the Habitat Agenda. This agenda aimed to address two themes of equal importance: “Adequate shelter for all” and “Sustainable human settlements development in an urbanizing world”. The urban issues and city development were also discussed in later conferences such as World Urban Forum 6 (UN-Habitat, 2012) and conference of Sustainable Development and Planning (Wessex Institute of Technology, 2013). These events tried to highlight the problems related to urban development and planning that affect rural and urban areas in all regions of the world. In addition to such events, much of the related literature and research have focused on the topic of the city and sustainable development such as Harris (2000) and Ng (2010). Thus, many related themes such as shape of cities, urban regulations for better quality of life, productive cities, urban mobility, energy and environment have become very important to consider on the way towards the urban future (UN-Habitat, 2012).

The 20<sup>th</sup> century is related to the phenomenon of rapid urbanization (FIG, 2010). According to Jenkins et al. (2007), urbanization is the process by which a country's population changes from primarily rural to urban and it is caused by the migration of people from the countryside to the city to search better jobs and living conditions. Based on United Nations projections, the urban population increased from 220 million in 1900 to 732 million in 1950 (29% of the world's population). By 2007, half of the world's population lived in urban areas, and by the middle of the 21<sup>st</sup> century all regions will be predominantly urban (UN-Habitat, 2010). In the regions defined as “developing world”, population growth – which is defined as the annual net increment of the population when fertility, mortality, and migration are all taken into account – in the urban areas will be particularly rapid (Jenkins et al., 2007).

According to the population division of the United Nations in 2004, the rapid urbanization creates major challenges, and affects the international development agenda of creating sustainable urban environment. The rapid urbanization in developing countries has also become one of the important topics in urban planning and sustainable development. One of the reasons is that the rapid urbanization often leads to negative environmental impacts, including changing of the urban microclimate. Those particularly at risk include the elderly, low-income earners and residents in urban areas of high population densities with limited surrounding vegetation. Furthermore, the rapid urbanization with limited landscape elements negatively affects the human health due to the increased pollution (Harlan et al., 2006). The lack of landscape elements, in turn, has a negative impact on microclimate and thermal comfort for inhabitants. However, despite these and other problems caused by urbanization, urban areas have an importance for na-



tional perspectives especially to encourage the investments and strengthen the economic growth (Tannerfeldt and Ljung, 2006).

Global warming is also a challenge for future urban development. Due to climate change, according to the worst scenario, the global air temperatures are expected to rise 4 °C by the year 2100 (IPCC, 2013). Moreover, extreme weather events will be more common in the future, and for example, heat waves will be stronger and last longer. This is a problem especially for cities in regions with warm and hot climates and the consequences include increased occurrence of heat stress and heat-related diseases. Furthermore, human performance in both mental and physical tasks diminishes at uncomfortably high temperatures. In addition, deaths and illness caused by air pollution tend to increase during extremely warm weather (Harlan et al., 2006).

Cities in warm climates are especially vulnerable because – in addition to global warming – the urbanization process results in a corresponding increase of urban temperatures in comparison to its rural surroundings, the phenomenon called Urban Heat Island (UHI) (Oke, 1987; Arnfield, 2003).

Within cities in the developing countries, the urban poor are especially vulnerable to heat waves due to sub-standard housing, high population densities and lack of green areas (Harlan et al., 2006). A given building density can result in different design patterns that affect urban microclimate in different ways. Parameters such as fraction of urban land covered by buildings, distances between buildings and average height of buildings (Givoni, 1998) affect the urban microclimate in terms of solar radiation, solar reflection, wind speed, wind direction, etc.

In order to reduce the negative climatic impacts in our cities, those involved in urban development, planning and design are encouraged to incorporate climate knowledge into planning strategies and to create links between microclimate, thermal comfort, design, and urban planning regulations.

Urban microclimate and outdoor thermal comfort are generally given little importance in the urban design and planning processes (Eliasson, 2000; Johansson, 2006b). Some studies have dealt with the relationship between urban planning regulations and microclimates. In hot dry climates, many studies indicate that the existing planning regulations are not adapted to the climate. In the city of Fez, Johansson (2006b) found that the intention of the current regulations is to guarantee daylight for buildings. This may be relevant for the winter period when solar elevations are low and passive heating of buildings is desired. However, during the long, warm summer, when there is a need for solar protection, this results in a very poor microclimate at street level. The worst conditions are found in areas designated for low-rise houses where plots are very large and plot coverage low. Al-Hemaidi (2001) and Eben Saleh (2001) reported that current urban design in Saudi Arabia has led to an undesirable microclimate around buildings. They explained this with the prescription of an extremely dispersed urban design where the provision of shade is totally lacking. The current urban form is characterized by gridiron plans with wide streets where the detached, low-rise “villa” is the most common type of house.

Despite these and other studies – such as Ali-Toudert and Mayer (2006, 2007), Berkovic et al. (2012) and Shashua-Bar et al. (2011) – have been recently conducted in hot dry climates, there is still a need to conduct studies that investigate the urban design from microclimatic and thermal comfort perspectives in the Middle East.

This study thus concerns the city of Damascus in the Syrian Arab Republic. Damascus is a city where the current urban form is characterized by gridiron plans with wide streets and lack of shade as well as a limited amount of green areas, which negatively affect the microclimate and thermal comfort. The study is one of the first in Syria in the field of microclimate and thermal comfort in outdoor urban spaces that investigates the relationship between urban design and microclimate and studies the impact of urban planning regulations on microclimate.

This study is mainly focused on residential streets as a part of urban design and how the urban planning regulations affect the street spaces as well as the spaces between buildings. The street is one of the important urban components of a city's physical structure and it acts as the physical interface between urban and architectural scales. The form of the street can climatically affect both outdoor and indoor environments in terms of solar gain in summer and winter, building surfaces absorption and reflection of solar radiation, wind speed and direction and its implication for building passive cooling systems and urban ventilation. Consequently, the shape of the street influences the outdoor thermal comfort – which in turn affects human health and well-being – as well as the energy use of buildings in the urban areas. Therefore, designing streets is essential for climate-conscious urban design (Ali-Toudert, 2005).

The study analyzes and examines the urban planning regulations from a microclimate point of view by using simulations. In addition, micrometeorological measurements and structured interviews in different urban environments are carried out. Furthermore, an urban design proposal is studied in order to give an example of how urban microclimate and thermal comfort can be applied in the urban design process and how urban planning regulations in Damascus affect the outdoor urban spaces. The study highlights the importance of microclimate and thermal comfort in the planning and design processes and it provides useful insights that can mitigate the negative aspects of urban design on microclimate and thermal comfort in Damascus.

## 1.2 Aim, research questions and limitations

### Aim and research questions

This research is an attempt to develop further understanding of the relationship between microclimate, thermal comfort, urban design and outdoor space users in the hot dry city of Damascus. This is done by studying the impact of urban regulations on microclimate in different urban design patterns in Damascus. This study also aims to investigate the behaviour of different thermal comfort indices and defines the thermal comfort limits for Damascus in the summer and winter seasons. In addition, understanding how to apply the knowledge of urban microclimate and thermal comfort in the urban design process is also a part of the aim.

In order to fulfill the aim of the study, the following questions will be answered:

- 1 What is the thermal impact of current urban planning regulations on microclimate in Damascus city, especially at street level?
- 2 What are the microclimatic variations and spatial differences in different outdoor urban spaces in Damascus?
- 3 How do people perceive the thermal environment in Damascus?
- 4 What are the thermal comfort limits for Damascus in the summer and winter seasons?
- 5 How can the urban design in Damascus be adapted to the microclimate and outdoor thermal comfort?

## Limitations of the study

The study is limited to the hot dry city of Damascus, Syria. The conclusions of this study cannot be generalized for all hot dry cities since there are considerable variations between different cities in term of size, planning principles, proximity to the sea, topography, etc.

In the simulation part, the study is limited to how urban design affects the microclimate and thermal comfort in outdoor residential streets since streets are the common urban spaces in Damascus. In addition, only residential urban zones in Damascus were studied. In order to address the thermal problems in Damascus, the first simulations were conducted only in July since this month is the hottest during the summer according to meteorological data from the Kharabo station (see Figure 2.7). For complementary simulations, the winter was also taken into account and the month January was studied since it is the coldest month (see Figure 2.7). In this study, both east–west (E–W) and north–south (N–S) street orientations were investigated.

The fieldwork (micrometeorological measurements and structured interviews) was limited to residential streets, public parks, and outdoor residential spaces between buildings in modern Damascus as well as in the old part of Damascus. The fieldwork was mainly conducted in the afternoons during both work days and holidays. Furthermore, the fieldwork was only carried out during the hot summer and the cold winter. Thus, spring and autumn were not included in the study.

Regarding the urban design patterns, only the aspects of microclimate and thermal comfort will be highlighted while other aspects such as philosophical, social, aesthetical aspects are not included in the discussion.

## 1.3 Structure of the thesis

The thesis consists of six chapters and six appended papers. The first chapter presents the research problem, aim, research question and limitations. Chapter 2 includes a brief description of Damascus (the area studied), urbanization in Damascus, master plan and urban planning regulations. In addition, Chapter 2 contains information about the climate in Damascus. Chapter 3 is a review of literature on urban microclimate and thermal comfort in hot dry regions as well as urban planning regulations and urban design in cities with hot dry climates. Chapter 4 presents the research methods, which have been used in the study. Chapter 5 includes results and discussion of the simulations, micrometeorological measurements, structured interviews, thermal comfort limits for Damascus and the application of these limits in urban design. Chapter 6 contains conclusions and proposi-

tions for the consideration of microclimate and thermal comfort in design of urban spaces. Chapter 6 also includes identification and suggestions for future studies.

The following papers are appended at the end of the thesis:

- Paper 1 Influence of urban planning regulations on the microclimate in a hot dry climate – The example of Damascus, Syria.
- Paper 2 Evaluating the behaviour of different thermal indices by investigating various outdoor urban environments in the hot dry city of Damascus, Syria.
- Paper 3 Urban microclimate and thermal comfort in outdoor spaces in hot dry Damascus.
- Paper 4 The influence of environment on people's thermal comfort in outdoor urban spaces in hot dry climates – The example of Damascus, Syria.
- Paper 5 Microclimate in hot dry Damascus: The influence of urban environment on human perception.
- Paper 6 Landscape interventions in improving thermal comfort in the hot dry city of Damascus, Syria – The example of residential spaces with detached buildings.



## 2 The city of Damascus – the area studied

### 2.1 The city of Damascus

Damascus is the capital and largest city of Syrian Arab Republic. It is located in the southwest of the country (Elevation: 620 meters, Latitude: 33.5° N, Longitude: 36.5° E). Damascus is the oldest continuously inhabited city in the world and it used to be fully surrounded by an oasis (Al Ghouta) (see Figure 1 in paper 2). The Barada River waters the oasis and Al Fijeh Spring provides the city with drinking water. The Ghouta oasis has been decreasing in size due to the rapid expansion of housing and industry in the city and it has become almost dry. It has also become polluted due to the city traffic as well as unplanned industrial and economic activities.

The formally planned Damascus has two main parts: Old Damascus and modern Damascus. Old Damascus has a regular planning in general, with streets oriented N–S and E–W (see Figure 2.1a). Most streets are narrow with deep canyons and projecting upper floors are common. The typical architectural style in Old Damascus has a simple expression from outside and rich decoration from inside with internal orientation to courtyards like in most vernacular architecture of old cities in the Islamic world (Behsh, 1993). This urban design came forth as a good response to the living conditions of both the natural and the social environment, based on age-old regional experience using local building materials and appropriate techniques of climate control (Bianca, 2000). Old Damascus' buildings are made of local building materials such as stone, clay, wood, etc., whereas in the modern part of Damascus modern building materials, such as concrete, steel, glass, artificial or natural stone, etc., are used. As a consequence of the planning regulations, modern Damascus has mainly attached and detached buildings created according to detailed rules for spaces between buildings, setbacks, building heights, building footprints, projections, etc. Moreover, buildings are outwardly orientated (see Figure 2.1b).

In Damascus, there are also informal settlements, which are mainly located at the edge of the city's boundaries. Areas such as Tabala and Dweila are examples of the informal settlements (see Figure 2.1c). Such settlements have attached buildings – with two, three and sometimes four stories – and deep canyons. Buildings have unfinished appearance and concrete, steel and glass construction materials are widely used in these areas. Buildings are built based on conventional construction techniques without architectural and engineering supervision. Therefore, they do not meet the official standards of the Damascus municipality in terms of regulations and construction procedures. However, the physical conditions of buildings are good since residents have managed to build dwellings that satisfy their basic needs for living. They have also managed to achieve other needs such as ventilation and natural lighting (UN-Habitat, 2001).



Figure 2.1 Urban morphology of (a) Old Damascus, (b) the modern part of Damascus and (c) informal settlements, which are normally located at the edge of the city's boundaries (Al Tabala area is shown here as an example). Source: Google Maps with eye altitude 1.25 km

Administratively, Syria is divided into 16 governorates called Mohafaza. Every governorate is generally divided into smaller units called Manatika, every Manatika is further divided into smaller administrative units called Nahia, every Nahia covers a number of villages, and the village in turn is the smallest administrative unit. Damascus is a special case, since the city is considered as a separate governorate called governorate of Damascus (CBS, 2011). Damascus governorate is divided into 16 smaller municipalities (Baladiyah). These municipalities are directly related to the central Damascus governorate in terms of planning and development issues such as urban planning regulations and construction standards and procedures (see Figure 2.2).

Damascus city is normally defined as the area within the administrative boundaries that have been issued by the Syrian government. However, the term metropolitan Damascus is commonly used. One of the reasons is that there are no clear borders between the governorate of Damascus and the governorate of rural Damascus which surrounds Damascus city. In addition, many areas in both governorates are integrated to each other.

A few years ago, there was a huge discussion about the term "Great Damascus". This aimed to enlarge the area of Damascus city by including some districts from the governorate of rural Damascus. Areas such as Darayya, Harasta, Zamalka and Jaramana were discussed to be parts of Great Damascus.

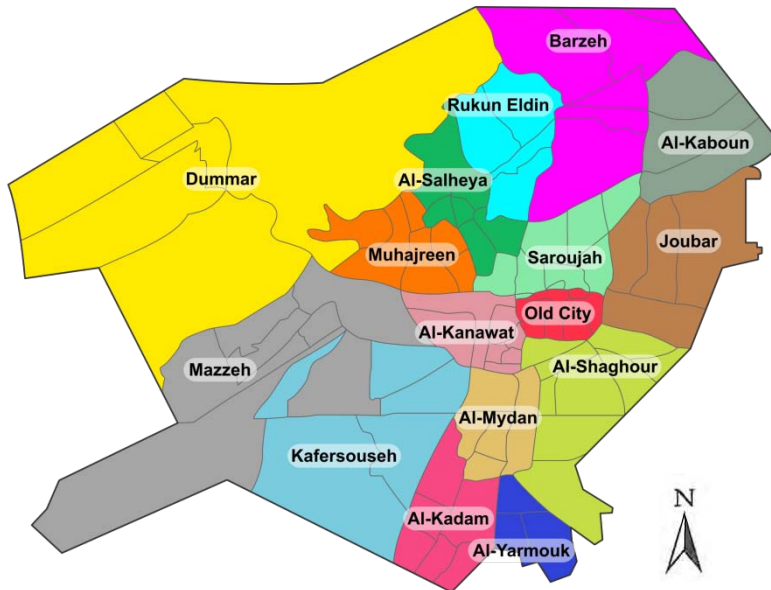


Figure 2.2 Simplified map of Damascus including the 16 administrative municipalities in Damascus governorate. Source: Damascus municipality

## 2.2 Urbanization in Damascus

Since 1970, Damascus – as the capital of Syria – has experienced great transformations in many aspects such as political, economical and social aspects. These transformations have led to a series of urban problems such as urban sprawl, informal settlements and unplanned districts. The result has created a larger city in size and population (see Figure 2.3 and Figure 2.6).

Between 1955 and 1980, the population of Damascus increased from 423,000 to 3 million. It is estimated at between four and five million (Library of Congress, 2005; Dorai, 2009; Wifstrand and Ria, 2009). According to the central bureau of statistics in Syria, the population of Damascus city in 2011 was 1.78 million whereas the population of rural Damascus was about 2.74 million (CBS, 2011) (Figure 2.4 shows the difference in size between Damascus and rural Damascus). Thus, the total population in urban and rural Damascus was about 4.5 million. Between 1981 and 1994, the total population of Damascus increased by 67% (UN-Habitat, 2001).

Most of the population increase has taken place in the informal settlements that are located at the edge of the city's boundaries such as Al Tabala settlement (see Figure 2.1). In 2001, it was estimated that 40% of the population in Damascus lived in informal settlements (UN-Habitat, 2001). In Damascus, there are about 50 documented informal settlements around the city, representing 27.5% of the total land area of Damascus. These 50 informal spots house more than 46.5% of Damascus population (Khdour and Kafa, 2009).



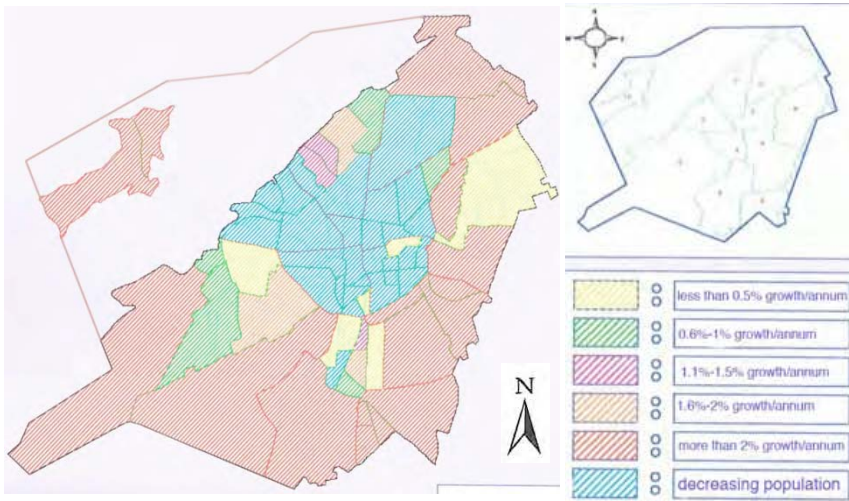


Figure 2.3 Population growth in Damascus per annum, by district in Damascus 1981-2000. Source: El-Ibrahim (2001)

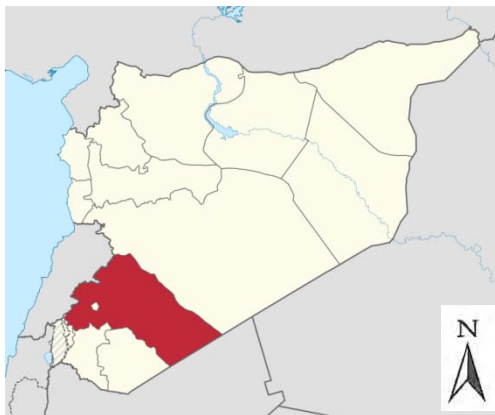


Figure 2.4 The difference in size between Damascus and rural Damascus governorates where the red zone is rural Damascus, which surrounds the city of Damascus. Source: Syrian ministry of tourism

The rapid urbanization in Damascus was also due to the rural–urban migration in addition to the transformations mentioned above. Damascus has also been a place of refuge for stateless Kurds, as well as large numbers of Palestinian refugees, Iraqis, alongside with economic migrants from other Arab states, including Egypt and Yemen. In general, immigrants and refugees have settled in the outskirts of the city on publicly or privately owned agricultural land that has not included in urban development plans. This action has led to a rapid growth of informal settlements that are located even outside Damascus city center boundaries. These areas are characterized by high population densities that have rapidly increased over time (see Table 2.1) and display a variety of problems including environmental degradation, the spread of epidemics, rising crime and social unrest, loss of agricultural

land, hazardous/chaotic building methods along with unemployment and low-income levels (UN-Habitat, 2001; Khmour and Kafa, 2009).

Table 2.1 Population densities in urban and rural Damascus in the years 1970, 1981, 1994 and 2004 (persons/km<sup>2</sup>). Source: CBS (2004)

	Population density persons/km <sup>2</sup>			
	Year 1970	Year 1981	Year 1994	Year 2004
Damascus City	7,090	10,593	11,813	13,152
Rural Damascus	37	51	93	125

## 2.3 City development and urban planning regulations in Damascus

Over the centuries, Damascus has been growing out of its old boundaries. The main two directions for expansion were towards the south and north-west. The southern expansion was mainly because this direction was the main road of the holy hajj to Mecca. Under Islamic rule, Damascus became a major meeting point for caravans of pilgrims undertaking the holy hajj to Mecca. The historical development of Damascus during the Roman, Seljuq and Ayyubid, Mamluk and Ottoman ages is shown in Figure 2.5.

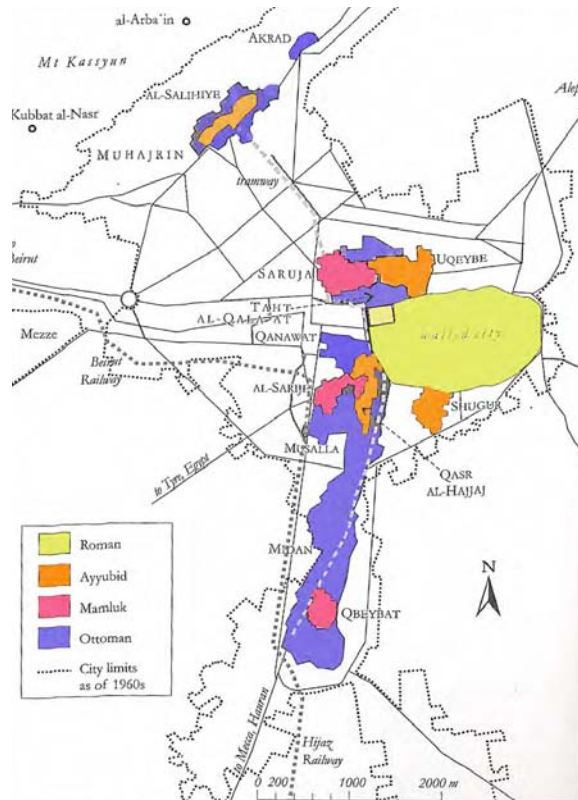


Figure 2.5 The historical development of Damascus during the Roman empire age (64 BC- 653 AD) and the Islamic Arab era especially the Seljuq and Ayyubid (1154-1260), Mamluk (1260-1516) and Ottoman ages (1516-1918). Source: Al-Qattan (2002)

The approach to urban design changed radically during the French colonial period (1920–45). New areas were built with wide streets in a grid pattern and buildings were outwardly oriented (Al-Kodmany, 1999). The city growth from 1938 to 1994 is shown in Figure 2.6.

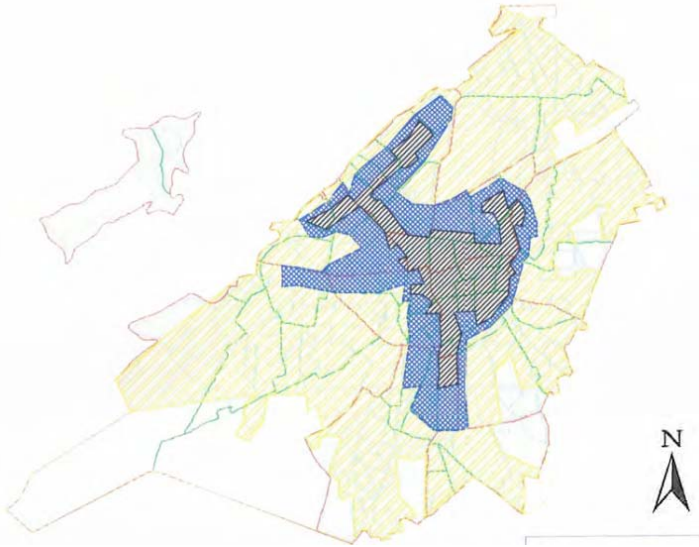


Figure 2.6 The city growth from 1938 to 1994 where the black hatch is the urbanization in 1938, blue hatch is the urbanization in 1960 and the yellow hatch is the urbanization in 1994. Source: El- Ibrahim (2001)

During the 1950s, it was necessary to develop a master plan for Damascus. The first attempt was by an Austrian company in 1957 and the second one started in 1963 by the French architect Michel Ecochar. In 1968 Ecochar presented the new master plan for Damascus and a few years earlier he had developed new urban planning regulations for the city; these regulations determined the urban form in Damascus during a period of 20 years (1965–1985). Ecochar's master plan and urban planning regulations have been the basis for all updated versions after 1985. This master plan mainly aimed to control and direct Damascus's population growth, protect the Al Ghouta oasis from urban sprawl, ease traffic congestion and promote transport connections with neighbouring countries and towns (Wifstrand and Ria, 2009). On the other hand, Ecochar's master plan could hardly have the tools to imagine the transportation or environmental issues that the city is facing today (Juvara, 2012). Municipal authorities have however never really ensured that Damascus' expansion followed Ecochar's master plan (Lababedi, 2009), and over decades, urban growth has spread over the Al Ghouta oasis exerting huge stress on water supplies (Lababedi, 2009; IRIN, 2006). Yet, there is no clear vision on the ground about how to build, what to build and where to build (Juvara, 2012).

## 2.4 Existing urban planning regulations in Damascus

In 1993, a special committee from the Syrian Syndicate of Engineers and Damascus Municipality was created in order to study, develop and complete the urban planning regulations for Damascus. The latest regulations were issued by Damascus Municipality in 1997 (Damascus Municipality, 1997) and they were ratified by the Syrian Ministry of Housing and Construction in the same year. The urban planning regulations in Damascus are the essential documents for regulating urban development and construction issues in the city. Literally translated from Arabic, the name of this document is Construction Regulations for the City of Damascus (Damascus Municipality, 1997).

The first part of the existing regulations contains special conditions about administrative procedures concerning building permit, public roads and protection procedures during the construction process such as fire and safety protection. The second part contains rules regarding building heights, projections, partitions and barriers between the plots, ventilation and illumination shafts, residential and commercial units and components, common facilities such as stairs and corridors, architectural elevations, roof forms as well as regulations for setbacks, and parking. The third part contains special regulations regarding maximum floor area ratio (FAR) which is calculated as the total floor area of the building divided by the total area of the plot. The third part also contains regulations about the basement construction in case of sloping plots, regulations for small apartments in the commercial areas, temporary building conditions, and fire protection. The fourth part which deals with urban zones for Damascus contains regulations on minimum plot sizes, minimum plot frontages, minimum setbacks, maximum building heights, maximum plot coverage (building footprints), maximum projections, etc (see Table 1 and Figure 2 in Paper1). In addition, these regulations determine the division of Damascus into urban land use zones. Damascus is divided into 14 zones of different land use including agricultural, administrative, industrial, residential, and commercial activities. The urban zones that deal with residential areas – planned residential area (PRA) and inhabited rural area (IRA) – are described in Paper 1. Parts 5, 6 and 7 contain, respectively, general information about hospitals as well as electrical and mechanical installations. There are also two appendices, the first one is about urban planning regulations for Old Damascus, and the second is about heating systems and cold water generation for cooling.

In 2009, the municipal authorities commissioned a number of planning studies to create a new master plan and to update the urban regulations for Damascus. This attempt – which was driven by the Consultant Company Khatib & Alami – is still confidential and perhaps will never even be published (Juvara, 2012). The main aim of this new master plan was to provide strategic planning for urban and population growth, saving the identity of Damascus and redefining the structure of the city (Juvara, 2012).

These efforts to draft a new, comprehensive master plan seem to be obstructed by a lack of coordination between different authorities such as the Ministry of Local Administration (MoLA) and the governorates of Damascus City and Rural Damascus (Hashimoto, 2009).

## 2.5 Climate of Damascus

Climatic data for temperature and relative humidity in Damascus are shown in Figure 2.7. Damascus has hot sunny summers and cold winters. Summer temperatures can exceed 40 °C during the day, but evenings are generally cool. The summer season lasts from May to September. The hottest month of the year is July, with an average high of 36 °C and low of 18 °C. The winter season lasts from December to February. The coldest month of the year is January, with an average low of 2.5 °C and high of 12 °C. In winter, temperatures can reach 0 °C during the night and snow fall is usual one or two times per year. Spring and autumn are the most comfortable periods, with an average of 22 °C during the day (see Figure 2.7).

Regarding global solar radiation, the yearly maximum average values of global solar radiation at 12:00 occur in June (1017 Wh/m<sup>2</sup>) and July (1020 Wh/m<sup>2</sup>) whereas the yearly minimum average values at 12:00 occur in December (446 Wh/m<sup>2</sup>) and January (505 Wh/m<sup>2</sup>), (see Figure 2.8 for the months July and December).

The relative humidity typically ranges from 14% (in the afternoon in summer) to 96% (in the morning in winter). The average monthly relative humidity is shown in Figure 2.7).

Over the year, the typical wind speeds vary from 0 to 5 m/s (calm to fresh breeze) and the prevailing wind direction is most often from the south west. Rarely, the wind speed can exceed 10 m/s (strong breeze). The highest average wind speeds of 5 m/s typically occur in July and the lowest average wind speeds of 2 m/s (light breeze) typically occur around November.

Rainfall mainly occurs in winter with a yearly average of 118 mm of precipitation falling whereas during the driest months in June and July, the rain fall may be as low as 3 mm.

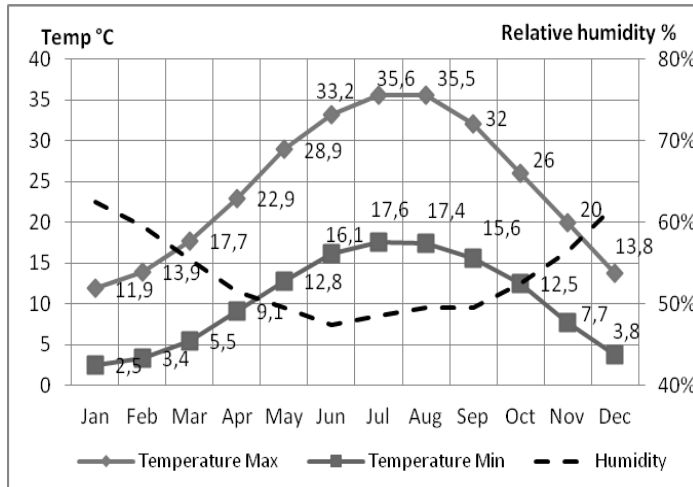


Figure 2.7 Climatic data for Damascus (average values of maximum temperatures, minimum temperatures and relative humidity for the period 1961–90). Source: Damascus airport meteorological station

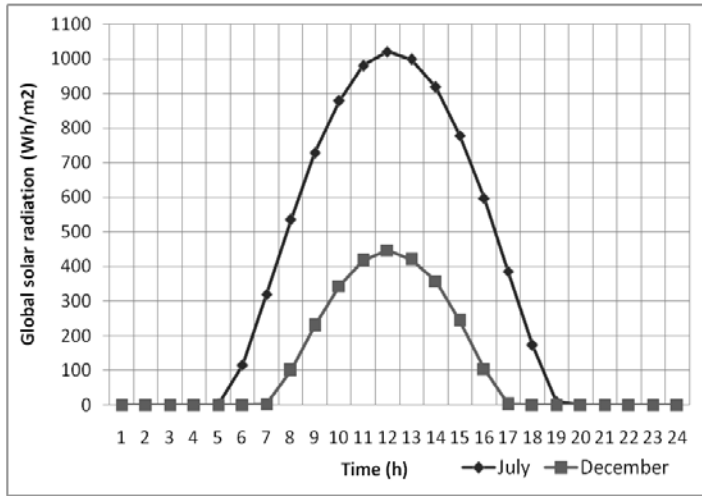


Figure 2.8 Climatic data for Damascus (average values of global solar radiation of the months July and December for the period (1971– 1980). Source: Meteonorm 6.0 (meteonorm.com)



## 3 Literature review

This chapter contains a literature review of the central topics of this thesis. The first section lists a set of fundamental books in the topics of urban climate, climatic design and thermal comfort whereas the second section reviews the literature that studies the microclimate and thermal comfort in hot dry regions. The third section discusses literature about urban planning regulations and climate, whereas the fourth section is conclusions.

### 3.1 Urban climate, climatic design and thermal comfort

The first three fundamental books discuss climatic design and thermal comfort mainly for indoor climate and the issue of microclimate and outdoor thermal comfort is less discussed. The last five books focus more on the urban level than on buildings.

In *Design with climate – bioclimatic approach to architectural regionalism*, written by Victor Olgay in 1963, the author endeavors to show the influence of climate on building principles. It contains three main parts. The book discusses the climatic approach at building level, the interpretation of climate knowledge in architectural principles, and it also talks about the applications on planning level as well as on architectural level. The book has useful bioclimatic approaches, but it does not discuss the influence of urban planning on outdoor thermal comfort and how this can affect the applications on planning and architectural levels in terms of thermal comfort.

The *Manual of tropical housing and building – Part 1: climatic design* was written by Koenigsberger et al. in 1974. It serves as a reference work for practitioners and as a guide for developers, architects, and designers. The book discusses the theory of climatic design and how practical solutions are derived from theoretical understanding. It contains a discussion about climate and comfort, principles of climatic design, means of thermal control, light and lighting, noise and noise control, applications, and design aids. The book has very useful information about climate and thermal comfort on building level, but it does not give close attention to the relationship between indoor thermal comfort and outdoor climate and how urban microclimates can affect the building design.

In 1980, Martin Evans wrote the book *Housing, climate and comfort*. The book starts by guiding the reader in the use of meteorological data and by showing the relationship between climate and thermal comfort. The book thus provides useful advice on such matters as site selection and type of construction. It also discusses how individual solutions in design of particular buildings can be applied together into a coherent overall scheme. The book discusses the relationship between outdoors and indoors, but the applications of this book mainly focus on indoors rather than outdoor environment.

One of the essential sources – that discusses the nature of the atmosphere near the ground – is the book *Boundary layer climates*, which was written by T. R. Oke (1987). This book discusses the atmospheric system and the topic of natural atmospheric environments and concentrates then



on the effects upon the exchanges of energy, mass and momentum. The book discusses the topic of man-modified atmospheric environments and shows the consequences of human interference in otherwise natural climatic systems. Although the book investigates only partly the relationship between climate and urban areas (part three), it provides very useful insights for architects and urban designers to understand such relationships especially the climate modification by buildings (airflow around buildings), and climate modification by urban areas. However, the book presents the information from a climatologic point of view and not from an urban design or urban planning point of view.

In *Climate considerations in building and urban design*, written by Baruch Givoni in 1998, the author discusses the relationship between building, design and the climate. The first part of this book is about building climatology, indoor climate and comfort, thermal performance of buildings, and passive buildings. The second part is about urban climatology. This part of the book discusses the impact of urban design and green areas on urban climate. The third part discusses the topic of building and urban design guidelines for the hot dry, hot humid and cold climates. Regarding the hot dry climate, the book discusses the characteristics of hot dry regions, comfort and energy use in buildings, building materials, and urban design. Although the book widely discusses the relationship between urban design and climate, it does not discuss the topic of outdoor thermal comfort in detail. In addition, the issue of climate in the book mainly treats architectural design and focuses less on outdoor urban spaces.

*An urban approach to climate-sensitive design* is a book that was written by M. Rohinton Emmanuel in 2005. The book focuses on design strategies that can minimize the negative effect of urban microclimate in the tropics. It discusses the phenomenon of the Urban Heat Island (UHI) and mitigation strategies, thermal comfort in the urban tropics, and climate-conscious urban design in the tropical urban outdoors. In addition, the book discusses the applications of urban design strategies and how to enhance the quality of urban environment in the tropics. The book develops the concept of shadow umbrella for radiation reduction in the outdoors during the day. This concept addresses two issues: the creation of shaded urban spaces that have direct bearing on outdoor thermal comfort, and determining the location for bodies of water such as fountains, lakes, and pools. The fundamental step to achieve the shadow umbrella is to establish the shadow angles by studying the date of the year, the time of the day, the location, and the building and site orientation and dimensions. However, this book mainly focuses on the warm humid tropics and does not take other climates, such as the hot dry climate, into account. Furthermore, the concept of shadow umbrella depends on a theoretical analysis and was not tested in practice.

In *Designing high-density cities for social & environmental sustainability*, edited by Edward Ng in 2010, many experts from different disciplines were invited to share their experiences and opinions about the issue of how to design high density cities. The book focuses on the socio-environmental dimension of the high density cities. Among the discussed aspects, the book deals with climatic design as one of the important issues in designing the high density cities. In general, many studies in the book focus on Hong Kong as an example of subtropical climate. However, other case studies – such as Kassel, Frankfurt, Singapore, Indonesia and Thailand – are discussed. The book has four main parts. The first part is about how to under-

stand the term high density and urban sustainability. The second part is about climate and high density design. The third part is about environmental aspects of high density design whereas the fourth part is about high density spaces and living. Regarding the climate part, the book discusses the following topics: urbanization and city climate especially the urban heat island, urban climate in dense cities, urban climatic maps and planning, thermal comfort issues and implications in high density cities, human comfort and the diversity of the urban environment, urban ventilation, and daylighting design. Although the book highlights the importance of climatic design and thermal comfort for high density cities and gives useful advice in urban design and planning, the subtropical climate and partly the cold climate dominate and the hot dry climate is not deeply discussed.

*Urban microclimate* which was written by Evyatar et al. in 2011 is one of the first books that focus entirely on urban microclimate and outdoor thermal comfort. The book tries to bridge the gap between climatology research and applied urban design. This book also tries to provide architects and urban designers with an understanding of how the physical structure of the built environment at all scales affects microclimatic conditions in terms of the spaces between buildings. Moreover, it analyzes the interaction between microclimate and each of the elements of the urban landscape. The book provides useful insights about the scale of urban climate, urban energy balance, the urban heat island, urban airflow, human energy balance in an urban space, thermal preferences, and climate applications in urban planning and design. It also discusses the microclimate design strategies in urban space, the use of vegetation, linear space, and urban microclimate modeling. However, the book focuses more on urban microclimate than outdoor thermal comfort. For example, the subjective thermal sensation is not deeply discussed.

## Concluding remarks

The discussion of the listed books shows that the interest in urban microclimate and thermal comfort has increased the latest decades. Most of the listed books discuss the climate and thermal comfort. However, the books of Olgyay, Koenigsberger, and Evans mainly focus on indoor climate and comfort and they deal with how to design buildings in different climates. They have limited information about microclimate and outdoor thermal comfort. Generally, the books of Oke, Emmanuel, Ng, Evyatar et al., and Givoni (to some extent) focus on the urban level rather than buildings. Specifically, the books of Emmanuel (2005), Ng (2010) and Evyatar et al. (2011) deal with microclimates as well as thermal comfort at the urban level.

## 3.2 Urban microclimate and outdoor thermal comfort in hot dry climates

Previous studies on urban microclimate and thermal comfort in outdoor urban spaces have focused on various climates. Several researchers have studied cold climates (e.g. Nikolopoulou et al., 2001; Thorsson et al., 2004; Eliasson et al., 2007; Katschner and Thorsson, 2009; Kántor et al., 2012b). Some others have conducted research in warm humid climates (e.g. Emmanuel et al., 2007; Lin, 2009; Makaremi et al., 2012). Some others have studied subtropical climates (e.g. Spagnolo and de Dear, 2003; Chen and

Ng, 2012; Lau and Ng, 2013). Others have studied temperate climates (e.g. Thorsson et al., 2007; Andrade et al., 2011). Some others have done studies in hot dry climates (e.g. Bourbia and Awbi, 2004; Ali-Toudert and Mayer, 2006; Johansson, 2006a; Pearlmutter et al., 2006 and 2007; Djenane et al., 2008; Al Jawabra and Nikolopoulou, 2009; Fahmy and Sharples, 2009; Shashua-Bar et al., 2011; Mahmoud, 2011; Berkovic et al., 2012 and Hedquist and Brazel, 2014). The reviewed literature below regards hot dry climates.

Bourbia and Awbi (2004a and 2004b) discuss the building cluster and shading in an urban canyon in the hot dry climate of the city El-Oued in Algeria. It is a microclimate study which was carried out by conducting a measurement study of air and surface temperatures as well as a shading simulation study by using the Shadowpack PC code version 2 (Beckham 1980). The authors examined the influence of H/W ratio – i.e. the ratio of building height (H) to street width (W) – and sky view factor (SVF) of street design on microclimate and especially the air temperature and surface temperature. The study argues that there is a strong correlation between decreasing SVF and decreasing surface temperature but only weak correlation between decreasing SVF and decreasing air temperature. Regarding the simulation study, the authors conclude that a number of useful relationships can be developed between the geometry and the microclimate of urban street canyons and these relationships are very helpful for professionals developing urban design guidelines for the street dimensions and orientations. However, the study only examined the air temperature and surface temperature and no other climatic parameters were measured such as solar radiation, wind speed, and relative humidity. Consequently, thermal comfort was not included in the study, and neither were interviews nor questionnaires to assess people's thermal sensation.

Ali-Toudert and Mayer (2006) conducted a simulation study on the effects of aspect ratio (or height to width ratio, H/W) and orientation of urban street canyons on outdoor thermal comfort in the hot dry climate of Ghardaia, Algeria. The study was carried out by using the ENVI-met simulation program. The results show contrasting patterns of thermal comfort between shallow and deep urban canyons as well as between various orientations studied. It also concludes that thermal comfort is very difficult to reach passively in extremely hot and dry climates, but that improvement is possible; the air temperature slightly decreases when the aspect ratio increases, but the radiation fluxes expressed by the mean radiant temperature are by far more decisive. Thus in summer time, the thermal comfort improves when H/W ratio increases. However, the simulations were only run for a typical summer day and the winter time was not taken into account in the thermal comfort analysis.

Johansson (2006a) studied the influence of urban geometry on outdoor thermal comfort in the hot dry climate of Fez, Morocco. The study was based on measurements during summer and winter. The study compared a deep and shallow street canyon regarding microclimate and thermal comfort. The study argued that in summer the deep canyon is fairly comfortable whereas the shallow is extremely uncomfortable. On the other hand, the winter results show the opposite. The study concluded that for the hot dry climate, the compact urban design with deep canyons is preferable but for the winter in Fez, the urban design should include some wider streets or open spaces in order to provide solar access. However, the study was only based on measurements and did not include a questionnaire study about the subjective thermal perceptions. Moreover, the Physiological Equivalent

Temperature index (PET) – see Chapter 4 – was the only calculated index to analyze the results and no other indices have been investigated in order to test the validity of these results.

Pearlmutter et al. (2007) constructed an open air scale model to quantify radiation on pedestrians and convective energy exchange in street canyons of varying geometry as well as surface-atmosphere energy exchange above the urban canopy. The results indicate that in a hot arid climate, the deep canyons which have north–south orientation can reduce overall pedestrian thermal discomfort, while in east–west oriented canyons the effect of street proportions (H/W ratio) is much less pronounced. However, this study does not represent the real urban canyons since it was conducted in an open air model and not in real city canyons, which normally have irregular building heights, different roof forms, and different materials in the façades such as concrete, glass, etc. The author calculated the Index of Thermal Stress (ITS) (Givoni, 1976). Using ITS makes the results difficult to compare with other studies since this index it is not commonly used.

Djenane et al. (2008) investigated the microclimatic behaviour of urban forms in the hot dry city of Béni-Isguen located in the M'zab Valley region, Algeria. The aim of the study was to approach the interaction between the climatic constraints and the solutions adapted in terms of land use and urban morphology in the streets. The study was based on practical microclimatic measurements during the summer. The study was conducted in four different morphological areas which varied between high and low urban density with H/W ratios between 1.6 and 9.7 and with plot coverage between 10% and 87%. The authors demonstrate the importance of morphological characteristics of the urban tissue in the hot dry climate. They also show that the thermal behaviour at the street level is related both to the solar exposure and the wind speed effect; i.e. high H/W ratio leads to lower air temperature and wind speed. Moreover, the streets' overheating during the day is strongly affected by heat dissipation the previous night. However, the study was conducted only in the summer time and no measurements were conducted during the winter. The results were only based on air temperatures and wind speed and the study did not examine the effect of urban form on solar radiation, mean radiant temperature, or thermal comfort.

Al Jawabra and Nikolopoulou (2009) studied the outdoor thermal comfort and the effect of socio-economic background and cultural differences in the hot dry climate of Marrakech in North Africa and Phoenix in North America. The authors aimed to develop better understanding of the complex relationship between microclimate and human behaviour in outdoor urban spaces in a hot arid climate. Microclimatic measurements and questionnaire surveys were carried out on two sites in Marrakech and three in Phoenix. The authors argue that particularly in the summer the number of people and activities outdoors are influenced by the solar radiation. And people from different social backgrounds in hot arid climates have different approaches to the use of outdoor spaces. The study also concludes that the design is an important tool that can significantly improve microclimatic conditions in the specific climatic context. However, the study only calculated the Predicted Mean Vote (PMV) index and did not investigate the behaviour of other thermal indices.

Fahmy and Sharples (2009) investigated outdoor thermal comfort for different urban forms in the hot dry city of Cairo. The study focused mainly on courtyards and urban canyons derived from urban planning regulations in Cairo. Numerical simulations were performed during one day (6 hours from

11 to 16 local time) of the hot summer in Cairo (the day 26<sup>th</sup> of June was studied). Outdoor thermal comfort expressed as the PMV index was calculated at nine spots representing different urban geometries and green structures. The study showed examples of more acceptable thermal comfort conditions for some orientations and degrees of urban compactness due to the clustered form with vegetation and wind flow through canyons. However, the simulations were not calibrated through micrometeorological measurements. In addition, the study does not represent the summer season since only one day of the hot summer (26<sup>th</sup> of June) was investigated to study the maximum values of outdoor thermal comfort. Regarding the thermal comfort index, the results were based on PMV calculations which showed very high PMV values (PMV was between 3 and 7, mostly above the normal scale of PMV for outdoors where +3 equals hot and +4 equals very hot). The authors argued that such high PMV values were due to the simulation critical day of the hot dry summer of Cairo, and due to the overestimation of the global radiation in ENVI-met. No other thermal comfort indices – such as PET and OUT\_SET\* (see Section 4.4) – were investigated to compare with other studies.

Bourbia and Boucheriba (2010) assessed the impact of geometry on microclimate in Constantine, Algeria during the summer time. A series of site measurements (air and surface temperatures) were conducted on seven sites for which the H/W ratios varied between 1 and 4.8 and the sky view factor between 0.076 and 0.58. The measurements were performed during the month of July 2007 which represents the hottest period. These measurements were carried out simultaneously over a two weeks period. During the night, the study indicated an air temperature difference of about 3–6 °C between the urban areas and their surrounding rural environments. The authors argued that this difference in temperature is mainly due to the surface materials, which contain a high percentage of nonreflective surfaces (low albedo), water resistant surfaces and nonexistence of vegetation. These surfaces tend to have high heat capacities, and are therefore efficient at absorbing and reradiating the sun energy after the sunset. The authors reported that the larger the sky view factor, the higher the air temperatures during the night. Moreover, the higher the H/W ratio, the lower the recorded air and surface temperatures. Although this study illustrated the impact of UHI in urban environment, the study was only conducted during one season (summer time). Furthermore, the study did not calculate the mean radiant temperatures and did not use any thermal index to assess the outdoor thermal environment.

Shashua-Bar et al. (2011) studied the influence of trees and grass on human thermal stress in a hot arid climate. The Index of Thermal Stress (ITS) was calculated in order to evaluate thermal comfort in the different spaces. The efficiency of water use in providing improved comfort was gauged for each of the vegetative landscaping treatments by comparing the total evapotranspiration with the reduction in thermal stress. The study found that with shading, either by trees or mesh, discomfort was reduced when the shading was placed above paving. When combined with grass, both shading mechanisms yielded comfortable conditions at all hours. The study argued that the effect of trees was more pronounced than that of the mesh. However, the study was only conducted during the summer time (August) and did not take into account the influence of vegetation on human thermal comfort in winter. Furthermore, the authors used ITS to assess the thermal

stress. Thus, it is hard to compare the results with other studies because this index is not widely used.

Mahmoud (2011) investigated people's thermal comfort in an urban park in the hot arid city Cairo, Egypt, during the summer and winter seasons using field measurements and questionnaires. PET index – see Chapter 4 – was calculated in each measurement spot (nine spots in the park were studied). The study argues that differences in the PET index among these spots are due to different sky view factors (SVF) as well as wind speed. It also reveals an alteration in human comfort sensation between different landscape zones. The study found that the comfort range of PET for the urban parks in Cairo is 22–30 °C in summer and 21–29 °C in winter. However, this study was only based on calculating the PET index which does not take clothing and activities into account as variables (see Chapter 4). Since PET is independent of clothing and activity, it is not an absolute measure of thermal strain or comfort but it is a tool to assess the thermal environment (Höppe, 2000). In addition, this study was only conducted in an urban park and not in all types of urban spaces in Cairo. Therefore, the thermal comfort range which was found in the study is valid only for urban parks and it is difficult to generalize the results for other types of urban spaces in Cairo.

Berkovic et al. (2012) studied thermal comfort in courtyards in a hot dry climate. The study focused on three different courtyards surrounded by a 9 m high and 12 m wide building. The study was conducted for the hours 11–17 local time and only the month of June was investigated. The study was based on simulations and ENVI-met was used as a tool for investigation. The thermal comfort in courtyards – at pedestrian level 2 m above ground level – was evaluated by calculating the modified PMV index, i.e. the scale of PMV which is between –4 (very cold) and +4 (very hot) for outdoors (Jendritzky and Nübler, 1981). The results showed that the thermal comfort during the hot summer mainly depended on solar radiation. Thus, shading in hot dry climates has the major role in improving the thermal comfort, while the contribution of wind under all configurations studied is limited and much smaller than the shade contribution. On the other hand, the amount of shade is mainly affected by the courtyard orientation, and extended east–west rectangular courtyards received less shade. They were therefore the most stressful. The authors also argue that the thermal comfort is significantly improved by adding trees and/or galleries to the closed courtyard. However, the study mainly focused on courtyards and other urban morphologies such as canyons and detached buildings were not included in the study. In addition, the study was mainly based on simulations and neither meteorological measurements nor questionnaires or structured interviews – which investigate the actual thermal sensation for people – were conducted. Moreover, only the summer season was studied and other seasons such as the winter were not taken into account. Furthermore, the investigation of thermal comfort was based on the PMV index and no other indices such as PET and OUT\_SET\* were investigated.

Hedquist and Brazel (2014) investigated the seasonal variability of temperatures and outdoor thermal comfort in the hot arid climate of Phoenix, Arizona. The study was based on simulations using ENVI-met and three different urban morphologies within an area of 14 km × 6 km were studied. The four seasons in the years 2007 and 2008 were investigated (24 hours of simulations for one day of every season). The selection of the seasonal periods was based on the days which had low wind speeds (an average of < 2 m/s) and clear skies. This was mainly to match the 24 hours of field mea-

surements in 2008. The authors argue that selecting the days with such stable weather conditions allows for a good comparison between the sites when analyzing the UHI magnitude and temperature differences. The PMV thermal comfort index was calculated and presented as thermal comfort maps at 14:00 and 22:00 local time. The authors showed the effect of shade on the air and surface temperatures in the early afternoon in all seasons. The results illustrate that the areas in downtown – with high building densities and narrow street canyons – are more comfortable during the early part of the day (cool island) and they are less comfortable than the surrounding areas from the mid afternoon until the evenings (heat island). On the other hand, the agricultural open fields outside the downtown are uncomfortable during the daytime and more comfortable in the evenings. The authors argued that increasing the shade by adding vegetation and permeable surfaces will positively affect the outdoor thermal comfort. In winter, the results showed that in areas with high building densities and deep canyons, the thermal situation was slightly less comfortable than the open landscapes. The authors thus argue that the adaptation through choosing suitable clothing in winter makes it possible to increase the level of thermal comfort outdoors. However, the investigation of outdoor thermal comfort was mainly based on the PMV index and no other indices such as PET and OUT\_SET\* were investigated. Although the authors argue that the use of vegetation has a large potential for reducing thermal stress and increasing the level of thermal comfort in the outdoors, the study did not show examples of the effect of vegetation and landscape elements such as shading devices to be used for thermal comfort purposes.

## Concluding remarks

The review shows that the microclimate and thermal comfort in hot dry regions have been studied in different ways and have provided useful insights to the field. However, several of these studies investigated microclimate and thermal comfort only during the summer time (e.g. Djenane et al., 2008; Fahmy and Sharples, 2009; Bourbia and Boucheriba, 2010; Berkovic et al., 2012). Some studies on thermal comfort were based only on field measurements and no questionnaires or structured interviews – about the actual thermal sensation of people – were done (e.g. Johansson, 2006a; Pearlmutter et al., 2007). Most studies used only one thermal index (e.g. Al Jawabra and Nikolopoulou, 2009; Pearlmutter et al., 2007; Shashua-Bar et al., 2011; Berkovic et al., 2012; Hedquist and Brazel, 2014). Others have investigated microclimate and thermal comfort in only one type of urban environment, e.g. an urban park (e.g. Mahmoud, 2011). Some others conducted pure simulation studies (e.g. Ali-Toudert and Mayer, 2006; Fahmy and Sharples, 2009; Berkovic et al., 2012). Hence, there is no study in the hot dry climate that investigates microclimate and thermal comfort based on field measurements and thermal comfort survey, i.e. through questionnaires or structured interviews, during both the summer and winter seasons for different types of urban design and that calculates different thermal indices in order to compare with other studies. In addition, there are only a few studies (e.g. Ali-Toudert, 2005; Fahmy and Sharples, 2009), which deal with the relationship between urban design and outdoor thermal comfort. Thus, this review shows that there is still a need for in-depth research in the field of microclimate and thermal comfort in hot dry regions.

### 3.3 Urban planning regulations and climate

Salehi (2007) claims that “composing urban codes and regulations is a means of achieving the goals of sustainable development and ensure the formation of sustainable residency”. Yet, there are no in-depth studies about urban planning regulations and microclimate. A few studies in different climates have however highlighted the importance of these regulations for the city development.

Al Hemaidi (2001) studied the urban fabric in Riyadh, Saudi Arabia from cultural and climatic perspectives in connection with the current urban planning regulations that have been imported to the country. The author reported that these regulations relate neither to the traditional built environment and culture nor to the local microclimate in Riyadh city. Cultural and climatic problems have emerged because of these urban regulations. In order to establish the future urban planning regulations in harmony with climate and culture, the author claimed that the dwellings’ inward orientation, courtyards, and the high parapets are examples for planning principles derived from the culture. The narrow streets, buildings without setbacks, building materials such as clay and stone and light colors are also planning principles and guidelines that respond to the local climate in traditional built environment of Riyadh, Saudi Arabia. But, the study mainly dealt with theoretical concepts based on a qualitative analysis about the climatic effect, and the assumptions were not proved by measurements. On the other hand, the study focused on the negative aspects of the imported urban regulations. However, it did not give examples of how we could improve the thermal environment in the existing areas that were constructed according to the imported urban regulations.

Baker et al. (2002) discussed the mitigation of the urban heat island in the hot dry climate of Phoenix, Arizona. The authors highlighted the importance of the urban planning and design policy to be redesigned in order to mitigate the urban warming. In addition, the study suggested a set of recommendations derived from the City of Phoenix General Plan’s Goal 7, i.e. the strategies, policies and recommendations, which have been developed to explore and mitigate the urban heat island in Phoenix. The study provided recommendations about encouraging the planting of mature trees. However, these recommendations may not be easy to achieve in other hot dry climates due to the lack of water for irrigation. The study suggested only recommendations about mitigating the heat and solar radiation but it did not take into account other climatic parameters that affect thermal comfort and the human body such as wind speed and Mean Radiant Temperature (MRT).

Grazziotin et al. (2004) developed the CityZoom 3D simulation program as a tool for evaluating the impact of urban regulations. It helps to generate large sets of buildings in different urban scenarios by applying urban regulations on the plot geometry according to input parameters that determine the building characteristics such as the number of floors, setbacks, plot coverage, building height, etc. It also addresses environmental comfort issues such as sunshine access and shading visualization. However, this tool is limited only for the visualization of urban regulations and not for a deep microclimatic analysis regarding thermal comfort, mean radiant temperature, and wind speed and direction.



Kakon et al. (2010) investigated the effect of building height on outdoor thermal comfort in the tropical climate of Dhaka, Bangladesh. The authors focused on the building height as an important parameter in urban design and planning regulations in the city development. Thermal comfort was assessed by Temperature-Humidity-Index (THI) which uses air Temperature (Ta) and Relative Humidity (RH). The study showed that the air temperature decreased to some extent in the canyon by increasing building height. Results showed that in the case of an existing canyon with an average building height of 4-5 stories and H/W ratio of 0.47, the thermal situation was less comfortable than the case of a proposed canyon with increased building height to 8-10 stories and H/W ratio of 0.86. For the proposed canyon, the authors found that the increased building height provided comparatively more comfortable conditions than the existing case during day time (the temperature dropped from 35 °C to 34 °C). The study concluded that the policy to increase the building height could provide a better thermal microclimate in cities. The conclusions of the study were depending on both measurements and simulations. However, the measurements were only conducted during one summer day and no winter measurements were conducted. In addition, the study was only performed in one specific area in the city of Dhaka and did not study other types of urban morphology. Although the study showed that the level of comfort was improved by increasing the building height, no questionnaires or interviews were applied to investigate the effect of the existing buildings height on people's subjective outdoor thermal comfort.

## Concluding remarks

The studies reviewed show that the effects of urban planning regulations on microclimate have received little attention. Only a few studies have considered the importance of climatic aspects in urban planning regulations. Thus, further studies are needed to highlight the effect of urban planning regulations on microclimate. Such studies can be based on microclimate simulations and/or micrometeorological measurements and thermal comfort survey (questionnaires or structured interviews).

## 3.4 Conclusions

This chapter reviewed literature on urban microclimate and outdoor thermal comfort in hot dry climates. It also discussed literature on the influence of urban planning regulations on the thermal environment. The main conclusions from this chapter are:

- 1 The number of studies on microclimate and thermal comfort in hot dry regions has increased in recent years. However, there are still few studies including the winter season and most of the hot dry studies are mainly based on measurements and/or simulations. Thus, there is a need to conduct further research, which examines the relationship between urban design and subjective thermal comfort taking the summer and winter seasons into account. Such studies can be based on micrometeorological measurements, outdoor thermal comfort surveys and microclimate simulations.

- 2 There is a lack of research on the relationship between microclimate and urban planning regulations. Thus, there is a need to investigate the impact of urban planning regulations on microclimate and thermal comfort. Such investigations will allow planners, architects and decision makers to update the planning regulations taking microclimate and thermal comfort into account and reduce the negative impact of these regulations on the thermal environment.

This thesis therefore aims at developing better understanding of the relationship between microclimate and urban design in the hot dry city of Damascus. The study is based on the analysis of planning regulations regarding aspect ratio, setbacks, plot coverage, etc. Moreover, it takes the urban design of the most types of neighbourhoods into account. In order to assess the thermal environment in outdoor urban spaces in the hot dry climate, the study is based on both micrometeorological measurements and structured interviews – to investigate the actual thermal sensation of the space users – during the summer and winter seasons. In addition, it investigates different thermal comfort indices; some of them take clothing and activity into account. Furthermore, since the outdoor space is part of urban life, this study examines the influence of urban spaces on people's thermal perception. The study highlights the importance of good microclimate and thermal comfort in the planning and design process and it provides useful insights on how to create a climate-sensitive urban design in Damascus.



# 4 Methodology

This study is multidisciplinary in character. It focuses on the fields of urban microclimate, thermal comfort, urban design and planning. In addition, this study touches the fields of landscape design, architecture design, urban climatology, and environmental psychology. It aims at developing further understanding of the relationship between microclimate, thermal comfort, urban design and outdoor space users in the hot dry city of Damascus.

Based on the design of the research questions (see section 1.2), this study is mostly quantitative, since it is mainly based on simulations, measurements and structured interviews. Also, most of similar research in the field of microclimate and thermal comfort has been totally based on quantitative approaches and experimental methods. Studies such as Johansson (2006a), Bourbia and Boucheriba (2010), Hedquist and Brazel (2014) are examples of experimental research. The overall design in this study can be identified as experimental.

The aim of experimental research – according to Groat and Wang (2002) – “*is to achieve comparability among the units in every treatment group*”. One of the major strengths of experimental research is that, such research is a credible device to determine the causality, as mentioned in the following quotation of Moore and McCabe (1993): “*The best method – indeed the only fully compelling method – of establishing causation is to conduct a carefully designed experiment in which the effects of possible lurking variables are controlled. To experiment means to actively change (x) and observe the response (y)*”. In addition, the methodological preference for the experimental research is where results can be measured and quantified. The research assessment criteria are internal and external validity, reliability and objectivity (Groat and Wang, 2002). A small part of this study, related to the analysis of the urban planning regulations in Damascus, is based on a qualitative approach.

## 4.1 Research paradigm

The overall design in this study can be identified as experimental. Experimental research design is considered by positivist researchers because it is a way to represent a high standard of research (Groat and Wang, 2002). Thus, this research applies the postpositivism as a model of scientific inquiry (Robson, 2002). Postpositivism argues that the key approaches of the scientific methods are the experiments, which is an attempt to discern natural laws through direct manipulation and observation. It believes that the aim of the science is to hold steadily to the aim of getting it right about reality, even though that aim can be never achieved (Hacking, 1983; Creswell, 2013). Postpositivists presume that the objectivity in research is a legitimate aim, which maybe imperfectly realized (Groat and Wang, 2002).

According to Groat and Wang (2002), postpositivism is the traditional scientific paradigm that assumes an objective reality existing independently of the observer. Knowledge should be obtained through ‘dispassionate’ and ‘objective’ observations, in the way that the researcher interferes as little as possible with the studied subject.

At higher level, the underlying philosophy of research is Epistemology (Encyclopaedia Britannica Online, 2007) which is defined as the philosophy of knowledge or how we come to know the reality. Its methodology identifies the particular practices used to achieve knowledge of it, and therefore qualitative and quantitative approaches can be applied to obtain knowledge (Creswell, 1994). The definition of knowledge – in this context – is a matter of ongoing debate among philosophers in the field of epistemology. The classical definition specifies that a statement must meet three criteria in order to be considered knowledge: it must be justified, true, and believed (Cornford, 2003).

## 4.2 Overall research strategy

In order to achieve the aim of the study, qualitative and quantitative approaches were applied and in addition, a set of methods were used and combined. The overall research strategy is shown in Table 4.1.

Table 4.1 The overall research strategy showing the scientific approaches, applied methods and research tools (techniques)

Phase	Mission	Scientific approach	Method	Tools
1	Analysis of urban planning regulations	Qualitative and quantitative	Archival analysis <sup>1</sup> , modelling and simulation	Auto-CAD and ENVI-met
2	Microclimate fieldwork (measurements and structured interviews)	Quantitative	Measurements	Meteorological equipment and structured interview forms
3	Thermal comfort analysis	Quantitative	Quantitative data analysis (Probit analysis)	SPSS and Excel
4	Analysis of structured interviews	Quantitative	Quantitative data analysis	SPSS
5	Exploring the effect of vegetation and landscape elements on thermal comfort	Quantitative	Parametric <sup>2</sup> (Modelling and simulation)	ENVI-met
6	Evaluating an urban design proposal	Quantitative	Modelling and simulation	ENVI-met

<sup>1</sup> Archival analysis is a type of primary research which involves seeking out and extracting evidence from original archival records. These records may be held either in institutional archive repositories, or in the custody of the organisation (whether a government body, business, family, or other agency) that originally generated or accumulated them, or in that of a successor body (Yin, 2003)

<sup>2</sup> In this context, the term "parametric" is used to study the effect of changing one parameter on other parameters of the studied model (Johansson, 2006b)

The first phase of the study dealt with the analysis of urban planning regulations. In order to define the research problem, an analysis of existing urban regulations was conducted. This phase included a qualitative analy-

sis, and a simulation study that focused on the three main residential urban zones of Damascus.

The aim of the second phase was to conduct fieldworks (measurements and structured interviews). Two fieldworks in the summer and winter were conducted in six different locations in Damascus. The micrometeorological measurements aimed to study the real situation concerning microclimate, urban design and outdoor thermal comfort whereas the structured interviews were simultaneously carried out during the field measurements in order to investigate people's actual thermal sensation and how they perceive the built environment in Damascus.

After finishing the fieldworks, the third phase was conducted to analyze the results derived from the fieldworks in order to investigate the thermal environment in Damascus. The aim was also to study the outdoor thermal comfort by investigating the behavior of different thermal comfort indices.

Phase four on the other hand aimed to analyze the structured interviews. Quantitative analysis using SPSS 18 (Statistical Package for the Social Sciences Software for Windows) was conducted to investigate people's actual thermal sensation and how they perceive the thermal environment in different locations.

Phase five was carried out as a parametric study. Modeling and simulations were conducted for the summer and winter in order to study how to improve the outdoor thermal comfort in Damascus by investigating different urban design scenarios and using different landscape elements in different hours of the day.

Finally, phase six aimed to evaluate an urban design proposal from a thermal comfort point of view. This phase focused on how the urban design in Damascus could be adapted to the microclimate and outdoor thermal comfort. This was investigated through a simulation study where the thermal comfort limits of phase three were applied.

## 4.3 Analysis of urban planning regulations

### Selection of the urban zones studied

According to the existing urban planning regulations, Damascus is divided into 14 zones of different land use including agricultural, administrative, industrial, residential, and commercial activities (see Appendix 1). The analysis part of this study contains the following steps:

After translation of the documents of urban planning regulations from Arabic into English by the author, three main residential urban zones of these fourteen were selected for analysis. These three zones were:

- PRA: The zone of Planned Residential Area that is exemplified by the sub zone of palaces area in modern Damascus (see Table 1 in Paper 1). This zone contains only detached buildings (Figure 4.1). The reason for choosing the palaces area sub zone is that it contains the biggest plot size ( $>1500 \text{ m}^2$ ), lowest plot coverage (20%), lowest maximum buildings height (10 m), and widest setbacks dimensions (10 m) (see Table 1 in Paper 1). The location of PRA zone is shown in Figure 4.3 where PRA zone is found in the city center as well as Damascus municipality area.
- IRA: The zone of Inhabited Rural Area that is exemplified by the sub zone of new planning area in modern Damascus. Also this zone contains only detached buildings (Figure 4.1). The idea of choosing the sub zone of

new planning area is that it contains the biggest plot size ( $>600 \text{ m}^2$ ), and highest maximum buildings height (15 m). It also contains clear setback dimensions (see Table 1 in Paper 1). The location of IRA zone is shown in Figure 4.3 where IRA zone is mainly found in the suburbs of Damascus.

- OD: The zone of Old Damascus. This zone contains only attached buildings (Figure 4.1). Old Damascus was built in different periods in the past and it has special regulations regarding restoration and rehabilitation. The location of OD zone is shown in Figure 4.3.

The three zones were mainly chosen in order to test the impact of various aspect ratios – i.e. height to width ratios (H/W) – on the microclimate. The palaces area of the PRA zone has the lowest H/W ratio (0.31) and Old Damascus (OD) zone has the highest H/W ratio (2.95). The new planning area of the IRA zone has a H/W ratio of 0.83. The chosen zones include two extremes in the city of Damascus where the palaces area of the PRA zone is the most dispersed (lowest density) and old Damascus is the most compact (highest density). The residential area of the IRA zone is somewhere in between. The PRA (Palaces area), IRA (New planning area) and OD zones are clearly different concerning the distance between buildings, building heights, H/W ratios, and building footprint.

The idea of choosing two urban zones from modern Damascus together with Old Damascus is to compare different urban patterns in terms of microclimate and thermal comfort. This comparison could help to develop the future urban planning regulations for the modern part of Damascus.

The analysis part also includes a comparison between these three urban zones regarding the type of use, plot size, maximum plot coverage and number of floors, maximum height, and setbacks (Table 1 in Paper 1). The zones represent the common residential areas in Damascus. Although many residential buildings in these zones were created in different periods of modern Damascus' development, the existing urban planning regulations (1997) have generally considered the same regulations that have been applied in previous regulations.

Drawings as architectural plans, sections, and perspective model were made by AutoCAD in order to show the spaces around buildings, building heights, and H/W ratios (Figure 4.2).



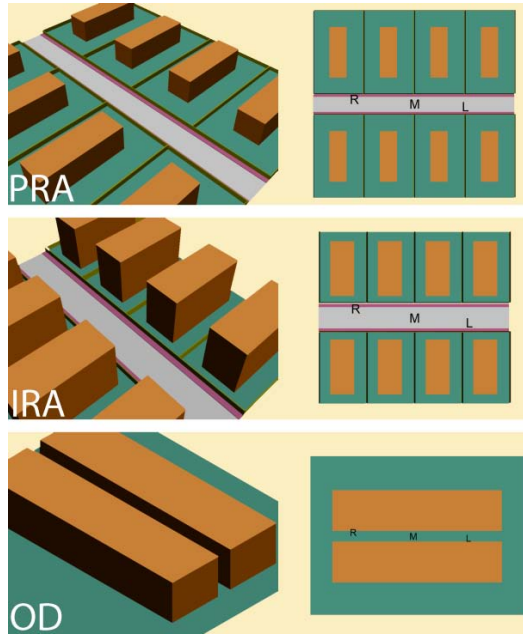


Figure 4.1 Perspective models and plans of the studied palaces area sub zone derived from PRA urban zone (Planned Residential Area), the studied New planning area sub zone derived from IRA urban zone (Inhabited Rural Area) and OD (Old Damascus) urban zone including the 2 m high wall that surrounds the plots for PRA and IRA. The ground surface temperature and the thermal comfort were studied at the right side of the street (R), at the middle of the street (M), and at the left side of the street (L)

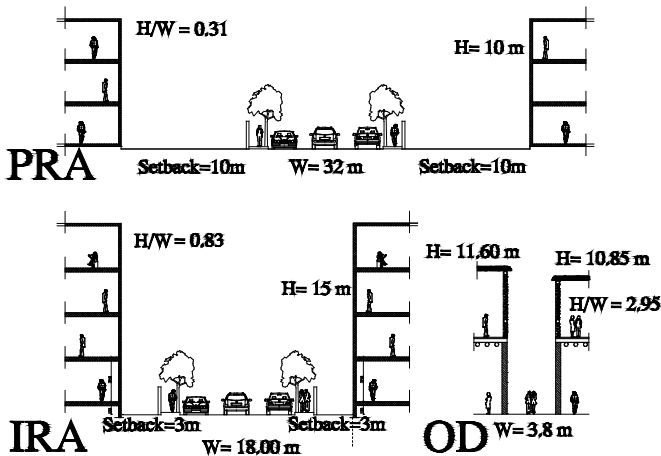


Figure 4.2 Typical sections and H/W ratios for PRA zone (palaces area), IRA zone (New planning area), and OD zone with rows of trees on the pavements for IRA and PRA zones

## Simulations

In order to compare the thermal conditions in the three selected zones, a simulation study was conducted. The simulation study was carried out only at street level since in Damascus the street is the most common public space; this is the main place where people can stroll and pass by for different reasons such as going to work and shopping as well as for recreational purposes.

A simulation study such as this one has the advantage that an unlimited number of points from the model can be analyzed, whereas in a measurement study, only the results derived from the measured spots are reliable.

### *Microclimate simulations*

The microclimate at street level was simulated with ENVI-met (Bruse, 2009) (see section 4.7). The input data for the simulation model contained the physical properties of the studied urban areas (buildings, soil and vegetation) and limited geographical and meteorological data. The input data used in this study is shown in Paper 1 and includes meteorological data from the station Kharabo near Damascus.

The study was carried out on the 21<sup>st</sup> of July (see section 4.7). The simulated period lasted from 7:00 in the morning until 16:00 in the afternoon in order to include the maximum air and surface temperatures, which normally occur at 14:00. In this study, both east–west and north–south street orientations were investigated. In modern Damascus, the street width was 12 m since this width is the most common one. On the other hand, the width of the studied street in Old Damascus was 3.8 m and it was derived from an existing street. See Figure 4.2c.

Both surface temperature and thermal comfort were studied in the simulations with ENVI-met. The reason of choosing the surface temperature as an indicator is that the surface temperature is easier for architects and designers to understand than the other indicators such as thermal indices.

### *Assessment of thermal comfort for simulation models*

In this study, thermal comfort was estimated by calculating the Physiological Equivalent Temperature (PET) index (Höppe, 1999) (see section 4.4). For the three studied zones, the PET index was calculated at pedestrian level (1.1 m height) for three points of the street: both pavements and the middle of the street. The positions of the studied points for which the surface temperature and PET have been calculated are shown in Figure 4.1 for the PRA and IRA zones. In the case of old Damascus, the studied points are located in the deep urban canyon near the building facades and in the middle of the street.

This simulation study – at this step – dealt with two cases; the first is the model which was built according to urban planning regulations. The second case is the model with rows of trees on the pavements in both PRA and IRA zones. The position of the trees is shown in Figure 4.2.

## 4.4 Microclimate fieldwork

In order to find out the characteristics of urban microclimate and thermal comfort in Damascus, both micrometeorological measurements and structured interviews – to investigate the actual thermal sensation of the space

users – were performed during the summer of 2009 and the winter of 2010 in Damascus City, Syria. The combination of measurements and structured interviews allowed the assessment of different thermal environments and to simultaneously determine the user's thermal perception. Moreover, the behaviour of different thermal indices could be investigated.

## Selection of measurement locations and time period

Outdoor thermal comfort is of importance both for residential areas and parks in Damascus. The locations selected were divided into three categories: two types of residential areas and parks. The reason to choose these three categories was to compare different urban environments in Damascus and different urban morphologies (attached and detached geometries) were taken into account. In addition, vegetation and landscape elements were considered especially in the parks to investigate the effects on microclimate and thermal comfort. Furthermore, these three categories represent the most common urban environment in the city of Damascus. Investigating the common urban environments allowed also the collection of information on how people perceive different environments from a thermal comfort point of view as well as on the physical quality of the built environment.

The first category – residential areas in modern Damascus – contained three measurement locations: Al Gassany area which was built in the 1950s (point 1 in Figure 4.3), the New Dummar area which started to be built in the 1980s (point 2) and the Barzza area which was built in the end of the 1970s (point 3). The second category – Old Damascus – contained a deep canyon: Al Qaymarieh Street (point 6). The third category – parks in modern Damascus – contained two locations: Al Tigara Park (point 4), and Al Mazza Park, (point 5). The measurement sites are also shown in Figure 4.4.

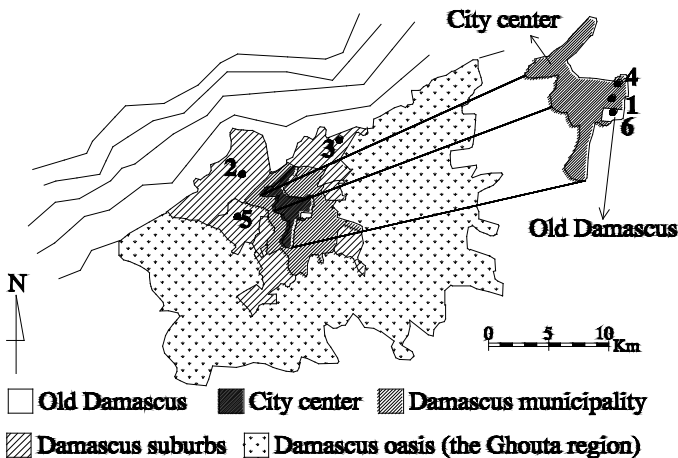


Figure 4.3 Locations of the measurement sites on a simplified map of the city of Damascus, which is located between the Kassioun mountain chain in the North West and an oasis in the south. See Figure 4.4 for description of the sites



Figure 4.4 Measurement sites in the city of Damascus, where (a) is Al Tigara park, (b) is Al Gassany area, (c) is New Dummar area, (d) is Barzza area, (e) is Al Mazza park, and (f) is Old Damascus

Both time-period and orientation were considered when carrying out micrometeorological measurements. The investigation was carried out during the most extreme weather conditions; the study was conducted during August and September 2009 for the summer, and during January and February 2010 for the winter. Northwest-southeast (NW-SE), northeast-southwest (NE-SW), and east-west (E-W) street orientations were included in the measurements as well as open spaces in parks. In these six locations, the measurement fieldwork was scheduled mainly during the three hours starting from around noon, since this time is the hottest time of the day. However, in order to extend the study of thermal comfort and to get a greater variety in microclimatic conditions, measurements were also carried out in the morning – in the Barzza area (8:00–11:30) – and in the evening in old Damascus (15:30–18:30) (See Paper 2). It should be noted that the measurements were carried out on different days at the studied sites. The official climatic data in Damascus during the measurements and time-periods are shown in Paper 2.

The measurement equipment was placed at the points where people could be expected to sit or walk either under the sun or in shade. Air temperature ( $T_a$ ), globe temperature ( $T_g$ ), relative humidity (RH), wind speed ( $W$ ) and wind direction ( $W_d$ ) were measured. The characteristics of the thermal environment in all studied locations were studied (see Papers 2 and 3). However, three areas – Al Gassany area, Old Damascus, and Al Mazza park – which represent the three studied categories of urban environments in Damascus were studied more in detail. The urban characteristics of these three areas are shown in Paper 2.

## Outdoor thermal comfort and thermal indices

Thermal comfort has been defined in various ways in the literature. In ASHRAE (1997), thermal comfort is defined as the condition of mind that expresses satisfaction with the thermal environment. A great number of indices, which try to predict the state of thermal comfort, mainly for indoor applications but also for outdoors, have been developed. The Predicted Mean Vote (PMV), the Standard Effective Temperature ( $SET^*$ ) and the New Effective Temperature ( $ET^*$ ) were all developed for indoor conditions (McIntyre, 1980). In addition, many indices have been primarily designed for outdoor applications, e.g., the Perceived Temperature (PT), which is based on the comfort equation of Fanger (Jendritzky et al., 2000),  $OUT\_SET^*$ , which is an adaptation of  $SET^*$  for outdoor use (Pickup and de Dear, 2000), and the Physiological Equivalent Temperature (PET) (Höppe, 1999). In this study, PET,  $OUT\_SET^*$ ,  $ET^*$ , and PMV have been used to assess and evaluate the outdoor thermal environment in Damascus. However, PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  were used for further investigations. The RayMan PC model (Matzarakis, Rutz, & Mayer, 2007) was used to calculate PET, whereas the ASHRAE Thermal Comfort Program (Fountain and Huizenga, 1994) was used to calculate the  $OUT\_SET^*$ ,  $ET^*$ , and PMV indices. More details about thermal comfort have been shown in Papers 1 and 2.

## 4.5 Structured interviews

A structured interview survey was performed simultaneously with the micrometeorological measurements in each location in order to estimate

actual thermal sensation and to be combined with the calculated PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  indices derived from measurements. The survey study covered a random sample in all measurement locations. People were interviewed by the author and by an assistant group (6 students) from the faculty of architecture in Damascus University. In both summer and winter, people were interviewed by the same assistant group in the same locations. A total of 920 persons were interviewed in both summer and winter. In each season, there were 60 interviews in each location plus 50 interviews in the Barzza area in the morning and in Old Damascus in the evening in order to extend the study of thermal comfort.

The structured interviews were designed to assess the thermal perception and other parameters such as climatic and aesthetic preferences and emotional state of people in Damascus. Moreover it covered questions about gender and age, clothing, living or working in the city, reason for being in the places that were studied, time spent outdoors and in the places, assessment of the microclimate, and assessment of the attitude to urban outdoor exposure. Regarding thermal comfort, the subjects were asked to report their thermal sensation according to a 9-point scale: very cold (-4), cold (-3), cool (-2), slightly cool (-1), comfortable (0), slightly warm (+1), warm (+2), hot (+3) and very hot (+4). SPSS 18 was used to analyze the results of the structured interviews. For more details, see Paper 2, 3, 4 and 5.

## 4.6 Thermal comfort analysis

To determine the neutral temperature, which is defined as the temperature at which people feel thermally neutral (neither cool nor warm) and which corresponds to the value zero in the thermal sensation scale, the probit technique (Ballantyne et al., 1977) was used. The neutral temperatures were determined by grouping all thermal sensation votes (TSV)  $< 0$  into a group of cooler than neutral, and all votes  $TSV > 0$  into a group of warmer than neutral. The votes  $TSV = 0$  were randomly split between the groups  $TSV < 0$  and  $TSV > 0$ . The neutral temperature was then determined as the index temperature at which 50% of the sample voted cooler than neutral and 50% voted warmer than neutral. SPSS 18 was used to perform the probit analysis. According to ASHRAE Standard 55 (2004) acceptable thermal conditions must be acceptable to 90% (high standard) or 80% (typical applications) of the users. This means that  $\leq 10\%$  or  $\leq 20\%$  of the users feel thermally unacceptable. Normally, votes outside the three central categories of the TSV scale are considered to be unacceptable votes (e.g. Lin 2009). In this study, the comfort limits for both 10% and 20% unacceptability were calculated. It should be noted that in the winter, there are few votes in the range of +3 to +4 and in the summer, there are even fewer votes in the range -3 to -4. Thus, these votes were carefully checked and a few strange values were excluded from the comfort limits and neutral temperature calculations, i.e. those that voted -4 during the summer although they wanted it to be cooler, and those that voted +4 during the winter although they wanted it to be warmer. For more details, see Paper 2.

## 4.7 Parametric study

The aim of this phase was to explore how vegetation and landscape elements affect the outdoor thermal comfort for detached buildings in hot dry Damascus by investigating different urban design scenarios. The study used two different thermal indices (PET and OUT\_SET\*).

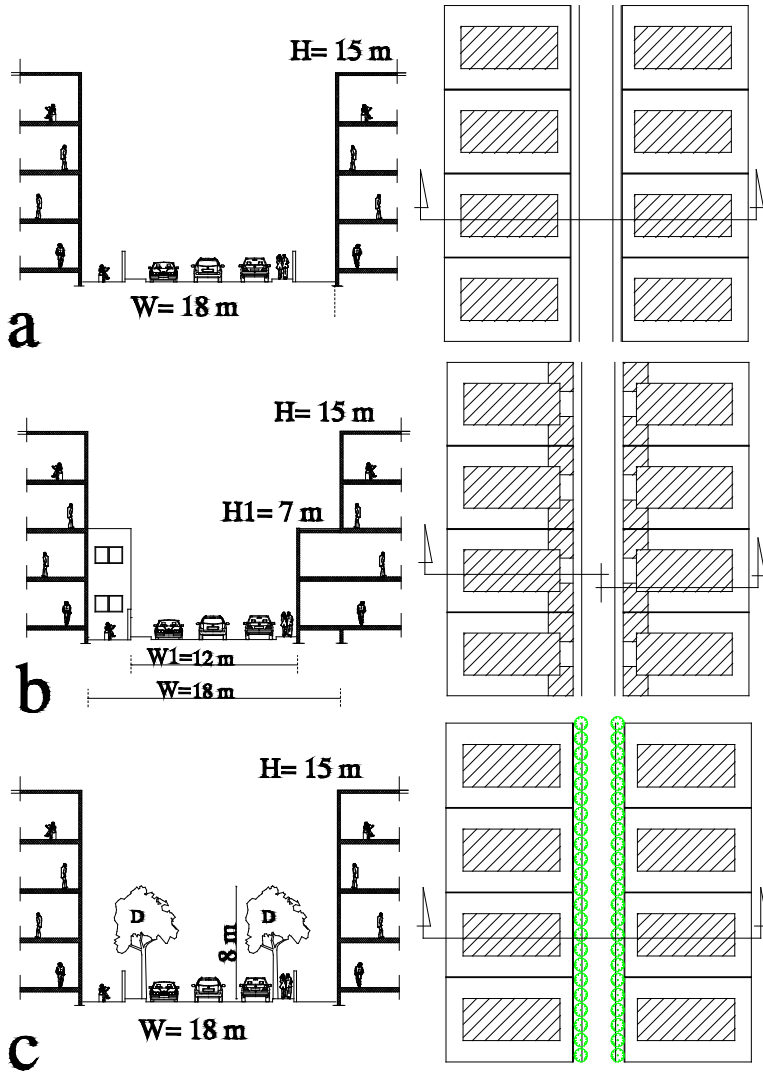
Two different street orientations (E-W and N-S) in summer and winter were examined using microclimatic simulations with ENVI-met 3.1 and the simulations were followed by analysis of thermal comfort maps for the studied cases. ENVI-met uses a three-dimensional computational fluid dynamics and energy balance model. The model has a high spatial and temporal resolution enabling a detailed study of how the microclimate varies within the studied space over time. The model gives a large amount of output data including the necessary variables enabling the calculation of thermal comfort indices.

The urban zone IRA (New Planning Area) – from the existing urban planning regulations – was selected for simulations because this is the most common urban residential zone for new development in Damascus and it is thermally uncomfortable (see Paper 1).

In the summer case, the 21<sup>st</sup> of July was chosen as a representative day for the summer. This day is more or less in the middle of the three hottest months in Damascus (June, July and August). In winter, the day 15<sup>th</sup> of January was studied to represent the winter season because it is in the middle of the three coldest months in Damascus (December, January and February). The simulated period lasted from 5:00 local time (LT) in the morning until 16:00 LT in the afternoon in order to include the maximum air temperature, which normally occurs at 14:00. In addition, the study focused on 12:00 and 16:00 because at 12:00, residential streets are full of students who return back home from schools and at 16:00, the streets and urban spaces are full of employees who return back home from work. The street width was fixed to 12 m since this width is the most common in residential areas in modern Damascus and this was divided into 9 m of vehicle route and 1.5 m for each pavement.

This parametric study consisted of a base case and three additional cases. The base case had the following characteristics: plot size 600 m<sup>2</sup> (20 m x 30 m), plot frontage 20 m, plot coverage 40%, maximum building height 15 m, and frontal, rear and side setbacks of 3 m, 4 m, and 5 m respectively (Figure 4.5a). For the three cases, only one parameter was changed at a time in order to determine the relative influence of each. The effect of the design parameters – such as H/W ratio, street orientation, spacing between buildings, vegetation and shading devices – on thermal comfort were studied. The characteristics of the three cases in addition to the base case are shown in Figure 4.5. The studied parameters have been divided into three main categories:

- Urban morphology: a new extension – with a height of 7 m – was added to the original building (base case) in the front block side. This affects the frontal and the side setbacks as well as the H/W ratio (see Figure 4.5b).
- Vegetation: a continuous row of street trees were added along the pavements (see Figure 4.5c).
- Vegetation and shading devices: a mixture of horizontal shading devices – over the plot walls as well as the pavement – and street trees were added (see Figure 4.5d).





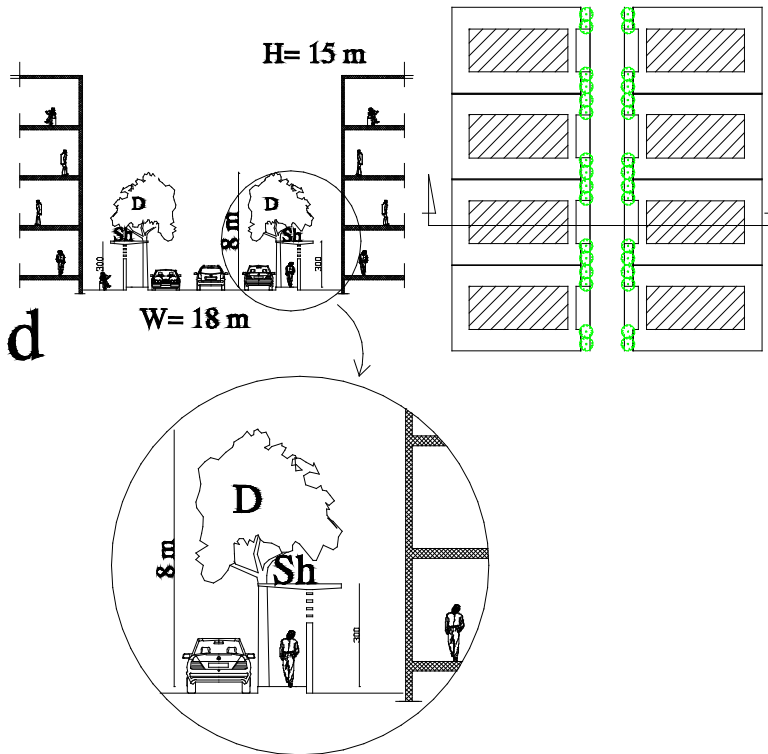


Figure 4.5 Sections and plans for the four studied cases where (a) the base case, (b) the case of changed urban morphology, (c) the case of added vegetation and (d) the case of added vegetation and shading devices

Each case was tested for E-W and N-S orientations and in order to analyse the studied cases in detail, the public space between the buildings was divided into three zones. For the E-W street orientation, zone A consists of the northern pavement of the street and zone B consists of the southern pavement. For the N-S orientation, zone A is the eastern pavement of the street and zone B is the western pavement. For both orientations zone C consists of the street between zones A and B (see Figure 4 in Paper 6). The model calibration and the input configuration data are shown in Paper 6.

The vegetation and landscape elements used were trees and horizontal overhead shading devices. *Ulmus Americana* (American Elm), a species which is commonly used in the Middle East as a street tree (Mahadin, 2001), was modeled in this study. The tree was 8 m high, which is appropriate for the urban design pattern of the IRA urban zone in Damascus, and a Leaf Area Index (LAI) of 4.6 was assumed during the summer. In winter on the other hand, 30% of the summer LAI values were assumed. This is because *Ulmus Americana* is a deciduous tree and it loses most of its leaves in winter. Because ENVI-met 3.1 does not include shading devices, a very dense horizontal layer of vegetation (LAI of 9) was used to model a shading device that totally blocks the solar radiation. More information

about the modeling of vegetation and landscape elements are shown in Paper 6.

## 4.8 Residential area design evaluation

An urban design proposal was developed. A simulation study was conducted to investigate whether or not the proposal fulfilled the thermal comfort limits determined in Paper 2. This proposal creates the first step to modify the existing urban planning regulations taking the microclimate and thermal comfort into account for future development in Damascus.

### Residential area typology

The urban design proposal was based on the existing IRA urban zone in Damascus. Several parameters were modified especially building heights, setbacks and plot coverages. The maximum height was increased from 15 m to 22 m. The maximum plot coverage was increased from 40% to 71% and 73%. The setback dimensions were also modified especially for the side and rear setbacks (see Table 4.2). In order to make flexibility in design, two design patterns, called P1-IRA and P2-IRA were applied. The modified parameters and urban regulations for P1-IRA and P2-IRA compared to the IRA urban zone are shown in Table 4.2 and Figure 4.6.

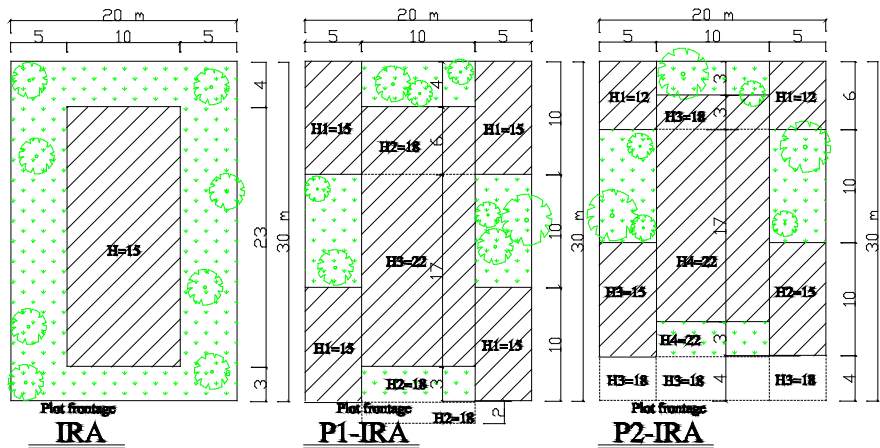


Figure 4.6 The detailed plans and dimensions for the existing IRA urban zone and for the proposed urban zones (P1-IRA and P2-IRA)

Table 4.2 The modified parameters for proposed P1-IRA and P2-IRA zones compared to the existing urban zone IRA

Parameter	IRA zone	P1-IRA	P2-IRA
Plot size (m)	600	600	600
Max. plot coverage in ground floor (%)	40	71	73
Max. number of floor	4+ b <sup>1</sup>	5+roof floor+b	5+roof floor+b
Max. height (m)	15	H1 <sup>2</sup> =18 H2 <sup>3</sup> =22	H1=18 H2=22
Min. plot frontage (m)	20	20	20
Min. frontal setback (m)	3	Varies from 0 to 3	Varies from 0 to 3
Min. side setback (m)	5	Varies from 0 to 5	Varies from 0 to 5
Min. rear setback (m)	4	Varies from 0 to 4	Varies from 0 to 3

<sup>1</sup>b = basement

<sup>2</sup>H1 = the maximum height at the frontal elevation (see Fig. 4.8b)

<sup>3</sup>H2 = the maximum height of the roof (see Fig. 4.8b)

The proposal consists of two urban residential streets patterns (Figure 4.7). The first is used by pedestrians and vehicles and can have small commercial facilities such as shops, mini markets and restaurants, coffee shops, etc. It also contains parking lots and pavements. A two-way street (6 m) – that allows vehicles to travel in both directions – was applied. The pavement width varies from 3 to 7.30 m in order to provide enough space to have an easy walk and short rest. The total distance – including vehicle routes, pavements and parking lots – is 20 m (Figure 4.8).

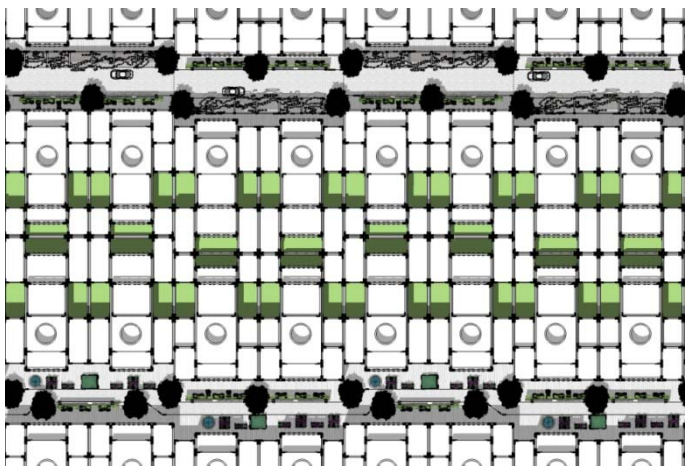
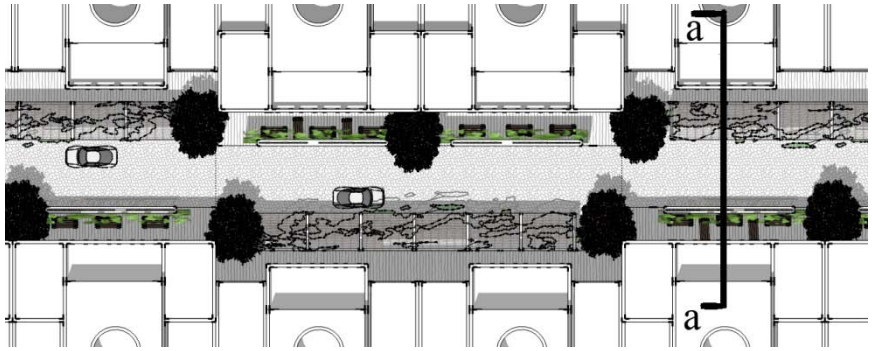
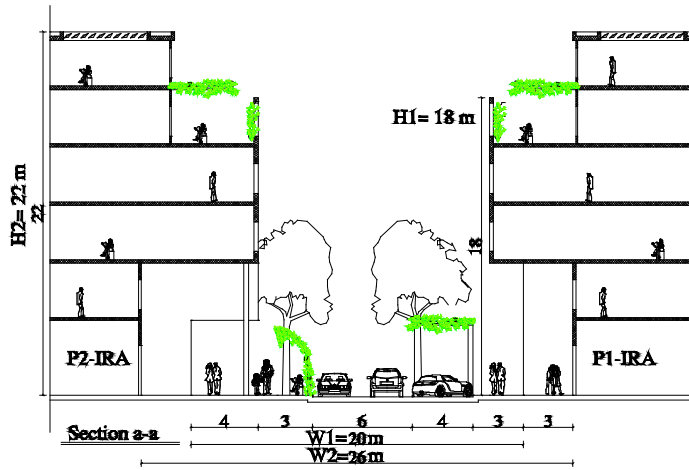


Figure 4.7 The site plan of the whole studied area including the shade on 21<sup>st</sup> of July at 13:00 local time



(a)



(b)



(c)

Figure 4.8 The pedestrians and vehicles street where (a) the site plan including the shade on 21<sup>st</sup> of July at 13:00 local time, (b) a vertical section including P1-IRA and P2-IRA proposed urban zones and (c) perspective view for the street

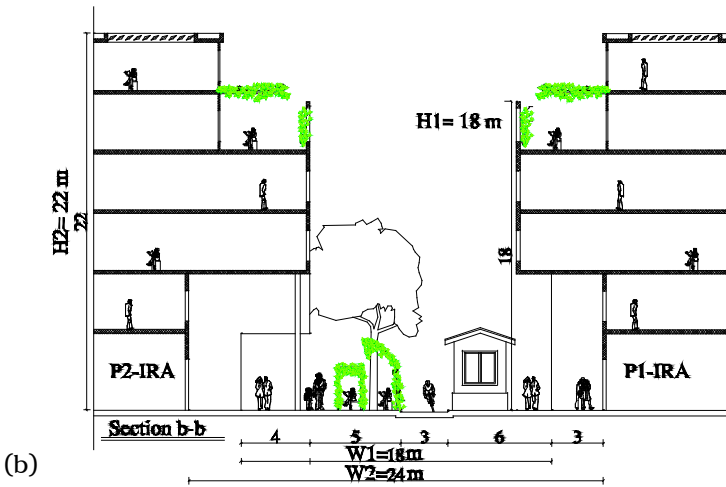
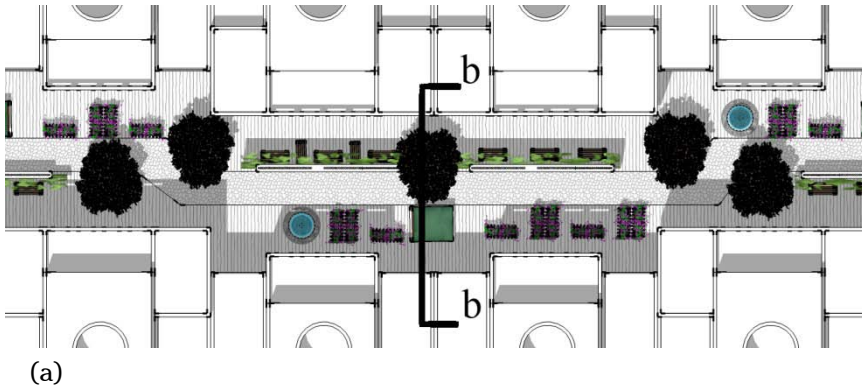


Figure 4.9 The pedestrians and biking street where (a) the site plan including the shade on 21<sup>st</sup> of July at 13:00 local time, (b) a vertical section including P1-IRA and P2-IRA proposed urban zones and (c) perspective view for the street

The second street pattern is mainly used by pedestrians for walking and biking and it can have some activities such as small coffee shops to encourage people to spend time outdoors and to make the space more livable. In addition, it has a 3 m space width as a biking route. The total distance of this pedestrian space – including pavements and the biking street – is 18 m (see Figure 4.9).

## Evaluation procedure

The urban design proposal was modelled and simulated by using ENVI-met. The study used OUT\_SET\* thermal comfort index. Since the E–W street orientation is more stressful than N–S orientation (see Paper 6), only E–W was examined for the thermal comfort study. The study was conducted for the summer and winter. In summer, the study was carried out on the 21<sup>st</sup> of July whereas in winter, the day 15<sup>th</sup> of January was studied to represent the winter season. The simulated period lasted from 5:00 local time (LT) in the morning until 16:00 LT in the afternoon. Only the results at 14:00 – the hottest vhour of the day – will be discussed. The vegetation and landscape elements used were trees, horizontal overhead and vertical shading devices. *Ulmus Americana* (American Elm) (Mahadin, 2001), was modelled in this study (see paper 6). In winter, 30% of the summer LAI values was assumed. This is because *Ulmus Americana* is a deciduous tree and it loses most of its leaves in winter. A very dense horizontal layer of vegetation was used to model a shading device that totally blocks the solar radiation as described in Paper 6.

Regarding the vertical shading devices, very dense grapevines (3 m high and LAI of 9) – which are commonly used in Damascus – were applied for this investigation. The model calibration and the input configuration data are similar to what was used in the parametric study and they are shown in Paper 6.



# 5 Results and discussion

This chapter highlights the most important results of the study. It includes results and discussion of the simulations, micrometeorological measurements, structured interviews, thermal comfort limits for Damascus as well as the applications of these limits in urban design. The first section of this chapter discusses the results of the effect of urban regulations on surface temperatures and thermal comfort in summer. The second section shows the results of the micrometeorological measurements during the summer and winter seasons, and the third section presents the results of the structured interviews. The fourth section is about the relationship between actual thermal sensation and thermal indices. The fifth section presents the calculation of thermal comfort limits and neutral temperatures for summer and winter seasons. The sixth section shows the results of the relationship between thermal perception and aesthetical qualities of urban design whereas the seventh section is about the parametric study for different urban design scenarios and discusses the landscape interventions in improving the outdoor thermal comfort in Damascus. Finally, an application of microclimate and thermal comfort in urban design for Damascus is discussed in section eight.

## 5.1 The effect of urban regulations on surface temperatures and thermal comfort

### Influence of H/W ratio and orientation on surface temperatures and PET

The surface temperatures in all three studied zones between 07:00 and 16:00 in July at the three points (L, R and M) are shown in Paper 1. For the PRA and IRA zones that consist of detached buildings in modern Damascus, the influence of street orientation on surface temperatures is not decisive. On the other hand, for both E–W and N–S orientation, the surface temperatures of the two zones in modern Damascus are considerably higher than those of Old Damascus because in the latter case the street has a much higher height-to-width (H/W) ratio. The street in Old Damascus is in shade during all hours of the simulation except at around noon for the N–S case as well as at around 10:00 and around 15:00 for the E–W case since the azimuth is nearly parallel to the street orientation for these hours. Surface temperatures in Old Damascus are normally the same in all points and rarely above 35 °C whereas in modern Damascus they can reach as high as 48 °C.

Table 5.1 shows the influence of the H/W ratio on the physiological equivalent temperature (PET) index at 14:00 in the PRA, IRA and OD zones. For the PRA and IRA zones, where buildings are detached, with H/W ratios of 0.31 and 0.83 respectively, the maximum PET reaches 51.7 °C and 50.7 °C respectively. On the other hand, in Old Damascus where buildings are attached with a higher H/W ratio of 2.95, the maximum PET value reaches only 33.2 °C. The results show that the H/W ratio has a large impact on out-



door thermal comfort and that the PET tends to decrease with increasing H/W, especially when buildings are attached. The main reason for the lower PET in the OD zone is the reduction of radiation fluxes due to increased shading which results in a lower mean radiant temperature. Table 5.1 also shows only a small influence of orientation and aspect ratio on PET in modern Damascus. Consequently, in urban environments that have detached buildings, the influence of street orientation and aspect ratio on outdoor thermal comfort is less decisive. Other studies for urban canyons (Ali-Toudert and Mayer, 2006; Johansson, 2006b) have shown that in general N–S streets tend to be more comfortable than E–W streets. This is because the N–S street is exposed to solar radiation during a shorter period than the E–W street.

Table 5.1 Influence of H/W ratio on PET values in the PRA, IRA, and OD urban zones for east–west (E–W) and for north–south (N–S) street orientations (maximum daily values at 14:00 in July). The thermal comfort was studied at the right side of the street (point R), at the middle of the street (point M) and at the left side of the street (point L.). See Figure 4.1

Zone	PET °C (E–W)			PET °C (N–S)		
	L	R	M	L	R	M
PRA Zone H/W= 0.30	49.9	51.7	49.4	45	52.1	48.8
IRA Zone H/W= 0.83	50.7	50.4	48.5	50	50.7	48.4
OD Zone H/W= 2.95	33.2	33.2	33.2	33.2	33.2	33.3

## Influence of vegetation on PET

Table 5.2 illustrates the effect of street trees on thermal comfort expressed as the maximum daily PET value in both the PRA and IRA zones. The result reveals that there is a great influence of vegetation on PET since when rows of trees are added on the pavement, PET values are lowered by about 17 °C for the PRA and by about 16 °C for the IRA zone due to the shading of the pedestrian pavement. Consequently, in urban environments that have low aspect ratios as well as detached buildings, the influence of vegetation on outdoor thermal comfort is significant. Similar results were indicated in other studies and they found that the direct solar radiation under a tree canopy strongly decreases (e.g. Ali-Toudert and Mayer, 2007; Ochoa et al., 2009).

It can be concluded that existing urban regulations in Damascus lead to a poor microclimate. The difference in thermal conditions is not very big between PRA and IRA zones since buildings are detached, but there is a huge difference compared to OD (attached buildings with high H/W ratio). This agrees with other studies on urban regulations in hot dry regions (Baker et al. 2002; Johansson and Yahia, 2010).

Table 5.2 Influence of street trees on PET values in the PRA and IRA urban zones (maximum daily values in July at 14:00)

	PET °C without vegetation	PET °C with vegetation
PRA Zone H/W= 0.30	52.1	35.3
IRA Zone H/W= 0.83	50.7	34.3

The study shows that the outdoor thermal comfort in existing urban areas in modern Damascus could be improved by introducing vegetation and landscaping in the urban design process. The use of vegetation would also have a positive influence on air quality as well as the quality of life. It is therefore important to create a link between urban landscaping and urban planning regulations and this link could be as a set of guidelines for street design.

## 5.2 Micrometeorological measurements and calculated thermal comfort indices

Summer and winter micrometeorological measurements were carried out in three different areas of Damascus: outdoor spaces in residential areas of modern Damascus, outdoor space in a deep canyon in Old Damascus and public parks in modern Damascus. The division into these three categories allowed gaining insight into the effects of urban design on traditional, modern and natural outdoor settings. In addition, such measurements allowed investigating the behaviour of different thermal comfort indices (PET,  $OUT_{SET}^*$ ,  $ET^*$ , and PMV) in the hot dry climate of Damascus (see Chapter 4). It should be noted that the measurements were carried out on different days (see Table 1 in Paper 2).

### Microclimatic variations

Figure 5.1 shows the spatial variations of the mean radiant temperature (MRT) for Al Gassany area, Old Damascus, and Al Mazza park as examples representing the outdoor urban environment in Damascus. It can be seen that in the summer MRT was higher in Al Mazza park than in Al Gassany area. The values in Old Damascus were considerably lower than in the two other places. The instability of MRT in Al Gassany area was due to the positioning of the measurement equipment, which was mounted beside a pedestrian path under a row of small trees where the globe thermometer during the measurement period was alternately in shade. In winter, there were major differences between the studied areas in terms of MRT. This is mainly because the weather was changing from one day to another during the measurement period (see Table 2 in Paper 2), and sometimes the change, of e.g. clouds/solar exposure, even occurred during the measurements. As in summer, MRT is however very stable in Old Damascus. The variations of measured  $T_a$ , RH, W, and MRT in summer and winter for all locations are shown in Paper 2.

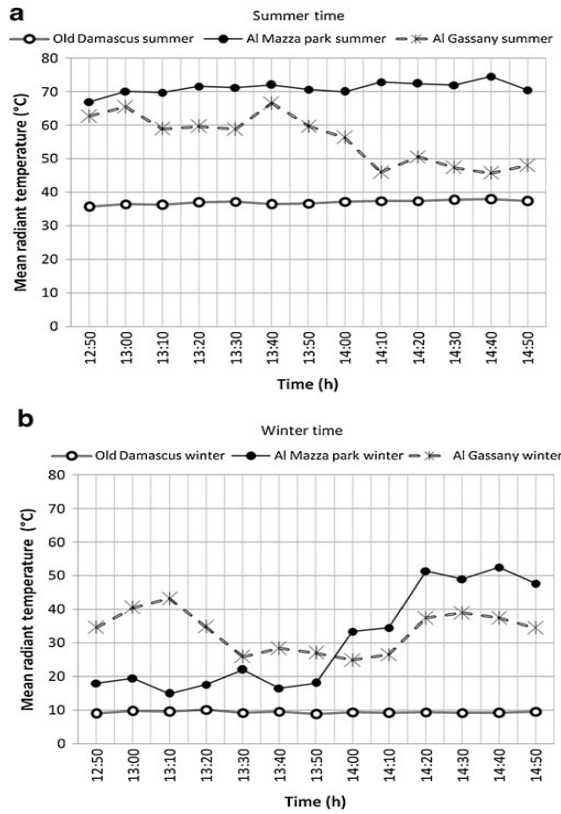


Figure 5.1 Mean radiant temperature (MRT) variations in Al Gassany area, Old Damascus, and Al Mazza park during (a) summer and (b) winter where the measurements were carried out on different days (see Table 1 in Paper 2)

### Characteristics of different thermal indices

Table 5.3 shows the calculated PET, OUT\_SET\*, ET\*, and PMV for all studied locations. For all indices, the results reveal that in the summer Old Damascus is less stressful than the outdoor urban spaces in modern Damascus, whereas in winter, Old Damascus is colder than the other areas due to the lack of solar exposure as a result of the high building density. In summer, Al Gassany area and Al Tigara park, where there was some shade from trees, were less thermally stressful than the other sites in modern Damascus where the measurement spot was exposed to sunshine all the time.

Table 5.3 shows that the average values of the PET index are higher in summer and lower in winter than the average values of both the OUT\_SET\* and ET\* indices. ET\*, in turn, has higher values in summer and lower in winter than OUT\_SET\*. One of the reasons why PET and ET\* have more extreme values is that they do not take clothing and activity into account as input variables. Another reason why OUT\_SET\* is slightly lower than ET\* in the summer may be because the effect of wind speed is included in the calculation of OUT\_SET\* and not in ET\*. For the PMV index, the calculated values in winter are within the range from -3 (very cold) to +3 (very hot)

except in Old Damascus in the evening. Only Al Gassany area was comfortable, i.e. within the comfort range of the index of  $-0.5$  to  $+0.5$  but this was mainly because the particular afternoon was exceptionally warm. In summer the values were in general well above the defined range of PMV and reached as high as  $+8$  in the Barzza area. Only the values of Old Damascus, both during the day and in the evening, were within the defined scale of PMV.

Table 5.3 Average values in summer and winter in all locations for the physiological equivalent temperature (PET), the outdoor standard effective temperature (OUT\_SET\*), the new effective temperature (ET\*), and the predicted mean vote (PMV) where (W) is winter and (S) is summer

	Avg PET °C		Avg OUT_SET* °C		Avg ET* °C		Avg PMV	
	S	W	S	W	S	W	S	W
Al Gassany area	46.1	23.2	36.0	27.6	36.7	23.9	5.5	0.2
Dummar area	53.3	7.2	38.4	15.6	38.4	10.6	6.5	-2.8
Barzza area	54.0	7.8	38.2	15.8	39.3	11.2	8.0	-2.5
Al Tigarra park	42.7	17.2	34.6	21.3	36.1	19.9	4.8	-1.6
Al Mazza park	53.2	11.1	37.9	19.4	39.1	15.2	7.7	-2.1
Old Damascus	35.3	6.7	32.3	14.4	31.9	8.6	2.9	-2.2
Barzza area (morning)	46.1	17.1	36.2	23.5	36.9	19.3	5.7	-1.1
Old Damascus (evening)	26.3	2.0	25.7	9.9	25.5	5.5	0.5	-3.9
All locations	44.6	11.6	34.9	18.4	35.5	14.3	5.2	-2.0

In summer, the results show that streets and parks in modern Damascus are more thermally stressful than the streets in Old Damascus. This reflects the strong influence of the urban geometry on the microclimate within built environments. Old Damascus has deep street canyons with high aspect ratios, which create a more comfortable microclimate since direct solar radiation and the mean radiant temperature decrease with the increase of the aspect ratio. This agrees well with other studies such as Ali-Toudert and Mayer (2006) who found that the air temperatures decrease slightly with the increase of the aspect ratio, but the reduction of the radiation fluxes expressed by MRT are far more decisive. In contrast, the outdoor spaces in modern Damascus have a low aspect ratio and consequently these spaces are more exposed to solar radiation, which has a negative impact on outdoor thermal comfort. Moreover, few places in the studied areas of modern Damascus have been designed to protect against solar radiation, especially in the Barzza and New Dummar areas. However, in the parks and in Al Gassany area less stressful environments can be found due to the existence of shading trees. In winter, it was more difficult to compare the microclimatic qualities between the areas since the weather conditions varied from day to day during the fieldwork. Old Damascus was the coldest area and that is because of the cold weather on the measurement day as well as the deep canyon, which prevents the direct solar radiation to reach the ground. In contrast, Al Gassany area was most comfortable, and that is because of the warm weather on the measurement day as well as the fact that the urban geometry in Al Gassany area allows the solar beam to reach the ground.

In this study, all the studied indices had basically the same tendency in assessing the outdoor physical urban environment in the hot dry climate of Damascus. The study of Spagnolo and de Dear (2003) found that many of the thermal comfort indices they tested were statistically better to predict the outdoor thermal comfort in summer than in winter due to the skewed nature of the winter sample in their study. In this study, no significant difference could be found between summer and winter predictions (see Paper 2). The results however illustrate that the OUT\_SET\* index has better correlation with TSV and thermal unacceptability than the PET index and this may be due to the role of clothing and activity which are included in OUT\_SET\* as variables (i.e. not given a constant value).

### 5.3 Subjective thermal sensation

Figure 5.2 illustrates the clear differences between people’s subjective thermal sensation in summer and winter for all studied locations together. The result shows that the people’s thermal sensation in summer is between cool and very hot, whereas in winter it is between very cold and hot. The highest percentage of people feels comfortable in the winter time, whereas they feel hot in the summer time. The reason why the distribution of the comfort votes was widely spread in both summer and winter is due to the varying weather conditions between the measurement days (especially in winter) but also due to individual differences of people’s thermal sensation. A similar difference in distribution between seasons was found in Sydney, Australia, by Spagnolo and de Dear (2003).

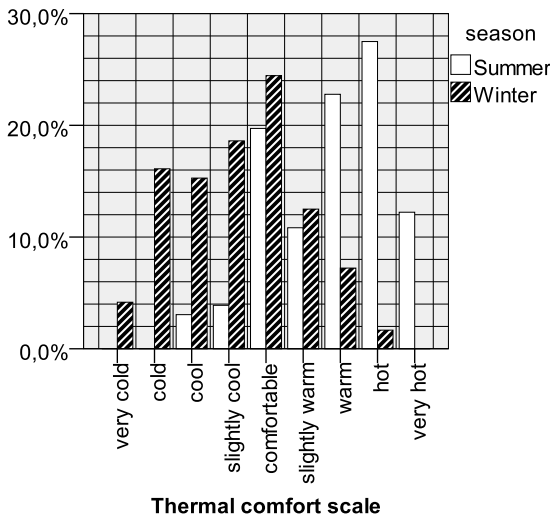


Figure 5.2 Frequencies for people’s thermal perception in the summer and winter seasons

### Behavioural adjustments – the role of clothing

Figure 5.3 shows the relationship between clothing and the thermal sensation votes in summer and winter as one sample. The distribution of clothing values is between 0.4 and 2.5 clo. This range represents people’s average

clothing values during the summer and winter seasons. Fig. 5.3 also illustrates that when people vote within the cold side of the thermal comfort scale, they generally tend to wear heavy clothing, whereas when they vote within the warm side of the thermal comfort scale, they tend to wear light clothing. The result confirms that people's consideration of their thermal comfort guides their choice of clothes.

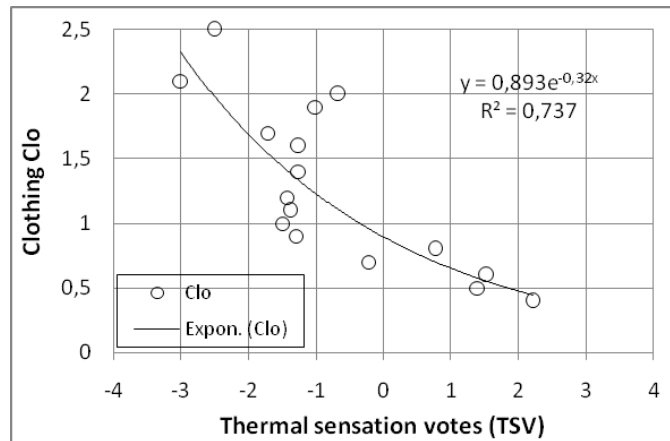


Figure 5.3 Relationship between clothing and the thermal sensation votes in summer and winter

As expected, this study found that the insulation value of people's clothing tend to decrease with increasing temperatures. The summer (hot season) values in this study are similar to those found by Lin (2009) in Taiwan (around 0.6 clo) (see Table 7 in Paper 2). The winter (cool season) values are however much higher in Damascus due to much colder winters. The study reveals that in the case of Damascus, the choice of clothing is to some extent also linked to cultural aspects; in the winter, high clothing values (about 2 clo) occur also at the sensation "slightly cool" (-1) (Figure 5.3). These clothing values are represented by the values far above the regression curve. Thus in the winter, some people adjust their clothing according to the weather, whereas others use heavy clothing although it is slightly cold. Hence, the dress code of some of the people of Damascus seems to depend on cultural traditions rather than climate whereas most people choose their clothing according to the weather conditions.

## 5.4 Relationship between thermal sensation votes and thermal indices

When comparing the relationship between the thermal sensation votes (TSV) and the calculated indices (PET and OUT\_SET\*) it was found that the original thermal sensation scales of these indices do not correspond to people's actual thermal sensation in Damascus. Figure 5.4 shows the relationship between TSV and the index temperatures for PET and OUT\_SET\* for each 1 °C index temperature (the samples were divided into bins for each 1 °C index temperature for the both indices). Although Figure 5.4

shows a spread (especially for PET), dividing the samples into bins does not show the real spread since it only shows the average value for every studied bin. The individual spread reflects the variations in people’s thermal sensation, which supposedly is due to differences in thermal history, emotional state, etc., as well as individual thermal preferences. For the PET index, the variations are also caused by differences in activity and clothing. The regression lines for all the tested indices for both seasons are as follows:

PET

Summer	$TSV = 0.060 \times PET - 0.941$	$(R^2 = 0.42)$	(3)
Winter	$TSV = 0.114 \times PET - 2.755$	$(R^2 = 0.60)$	(4)

OUT\_SET\*

Summer	$TSV = 0.134 \times OUT\_SET - 3.208$	$(R^2 = 0.87)$	(5)
Winter	$TSV = 0.082 \times OUT\_SET - 2.928$	$(R^2 = 0.66)$	(6)

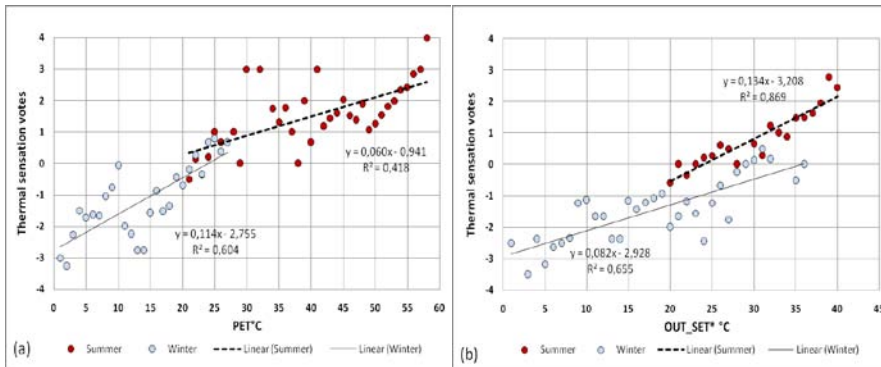


Figure 5.4 Correlation between the mean thermal sensation votes (TSV) and a the PET index and b the OUT\_SET\* index in summer and winter

The slopes of the regression lines indicate the sensitivity to changes of the index values. In summer for PET, the slope is 0.060 corresponding to 16.6 °C PET per TSV unit, whereas in winter, the slope is 0.114 corresponding to 8.8 °C PET per TSV unit. This shows that people’s thermal sensation is more sensitive to the variations of PET in winter than in summer. A similar tendency was found by Lin (2009) in Taiwan. In the case of OUT\_SET\*, the slope for the summer is 0.134 which corresponds to 7.5 °C, whereas in winter, the slope is 0.082 and it corresponds to 12.2 °C per thermal sensation unit. This means that the people’s thermal sensation is more sensitive to the variations of OUT\_SET\* in summer than in winter. A similar tendency was found by Lin et al. in Taiwan (2011).

The results show that the OUT\_SET\* index – especially in summer – has better correlation with TSV than the PET index ( $R^2$  for OUT\_SET\* is about 0.7 in winter and 0.9 in summer, whereas  $R^2$  for PET is about 0.6 in winter and 0.4 in summer). This is because PET does not take clothing and activity into account as input data (Höppe, 1999). Thus, the use of OUT\_SET\* is more suitable than PET. But on the other hand, the choice of thermal comfort index depends on the aim of the study. Among the tested indices, ET\* does not take variations in wind speed into account and is thus less suitable for this reason. If the aim of the study is only to assess and evaluate the

physical environment independently from the people's sensations, e.g., if the aim is to compare the thermal comfort of different design proposals through simulations, the urban designer or researcher can use any of the other indices tested in this study. If on the other hand, the aim is to assess the thermal environment taking into account people's thermal sensation, one can use an index that takes clothing and activity into account such as  $OUT\_SET^*$  or PMV. The use of these indices however requires knowledge – or at least an estimate – about people's clothing and activity. The fact that  $OUT\_SET^*$  is expressed in °C makes it easier to interpret than PMV. The PMV index is also restricted to moderate environments near neutrality (Spagnolo and de Dear, 2003).

## 5.5 Thermal comfort limits and neutral temperatures

Figure 8 in Paper 2 shows the percentage of unacceptability in summer and winter for each 1 °C index temperature of the PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  indices. From this graph, the upper and lower limits of the comfort range for different percentages of unacceptability can be determined. However, to obtain a comfort range with both the lower and upper limit, measurements during all seasons including spring and/or autumn would have been required, especially in a hot dry climate where there is a considerable difference between summer and winter. Since the field measurements in this study were only conducted during the extreme weather conditions of summer and winter respectively – and mainly during three hours of the afternoon – it was not possible to define one comfort range for the whole year which is accepted by 80% or 90% of the people. Instead, summer and winter seasons were split up into two different groups and the upper and lower comfort limits for the summer and winter could be determined.

Table 5.4 shows the upper and lower limits of thermal comfort range for 80% and 90% acceptability for PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  during summer and winter in Damascus. These limits are useful for architects and urban designers because they are valid for the most extreme weather conditions. The limits of 80% of acceptability will be applied in this study for further analysis since a wider comfort range is more appropriate outdoors due to the large climate variability (Spagnolo and de Dear, 2003).

*Table 5.4 Neutral temperatures and upper limits in summer and lower limits in winter of the comfort range at 80 % and 90 % acceptability for PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  in Damascus*

Index	Neutral temperatures °C		Acceptability (%)	Comfort range limits °C	
	Winter	Summer		Lower limit Winter	Upper limit Summer
PET	23.4	15.8	90	22.8	28.5
			80	21.0	31.3
$OUT\_SET^*$	35.1	23.1	90	28.9	29.1
			80	27.6	31.3



Table 5.4 also illustrates that the neutral temperatures in summer for both PET and OUT\_SET\* are considerably lower than in winter. This may seem surprising since one would expect the local population to be adapted to the weather conditions in each season. However, the results agree with those of Spagnolo and de Dear (2003). They explained the phenomenon by applying the concept of *alliesthesia* which is a psychological mechanism explaining the differences in sensation between seasons, i.e. if people feel warm then anything which makes them feel colder will be pleasant and vice versa. Conversely, the results disagree with the results for Taiwan (Lin, 2009) and Cairo (Mahmoud, 2011) where the authors found slightly higher neutral temperatures in summer than in winter (see Table 8 in Paper 2).

This study has defined different thermal comfort limits for the summer and winter, whereas other studies such as Lin (2009) defined only one comfort range for the whole year. The reason to study the seasons separately is that it is believed that people adapt themselves differently to each season physiologically and psychologically (Mahmoud, 2011). Thus, the lower limit for PET in winter (21 °C) and the upper limit in summer (31 °C) are fairly close to the limits found by Mahmoud (2011) in an urban park in Cairo (22 °C and 29 °C, respectively). One explanation of this difference may be that the study of Cairo was only conducted in a park whereas this study was conducted in different urban environments. In fact, this study found that the parks in summer are less stressful than the built up environments in the city (see Table 5.3).

For OUT\_SET\*, the winter neutral temperature in Damascus is higher than the summer one and the difference between the summer and winter neutral temperatures is 12 °C. This agrees well with the results in subtropical Sydney (Spagnolo and de Dear 2003) where the difference was also around 12 °C. Moreover, the summer neutral temperatures in Damascus (23.1 °C) and in Sydney (23.3 °C) were almost equal. However, Lin et al. (2011) found higher neutral OUT\_SET\* in the hot season (29.3 °C) than in the cool season (28 °C).

## 5.6 Thermal sensation and aesthetic qualities of the place

Figure 5.5a shows the percentage frequencies for the aesthetic quality of the places (beauty, ugliness). The results show that the majority of the people, 72% and 82% in summer and winter respectively, experience the same places as beautiful, whereas only 18% and 13% in summer and winter respectively experience the places as neutral, and 10% and 5% in summer and winter respectively experience the places as ugly (Chi-square = 10.52,  $P = .005$ ,  $df = 2$ ). Figure 5.5b illustrates the percentage frequencies of the pleasantness and unpleasantness in the place. The result shows that the majority of the people, 68% and 78% in summer and winter respectively, experience the same places as pleasant whereas, only 19% and 16% in summer and winter respectively experience the places as neutral, and 13% and 6% in summer and winter respectively experience the places as unpleasant (Chi-square = 11.14,  $P = .004$ ,  $df = 2$ ).

The results show that the people experience the same places in the winter season more beautiful and pleasant than in the summer season. This indicates that people's perception of beauty and pleasantness is influenced by the weather and climate. Similar results were found in other studies in different climates (e.g. Knez & Thorsson, 2006). More results about thermal sensation and aesthetic quality of urban design are shown in Papers 4 and 5.

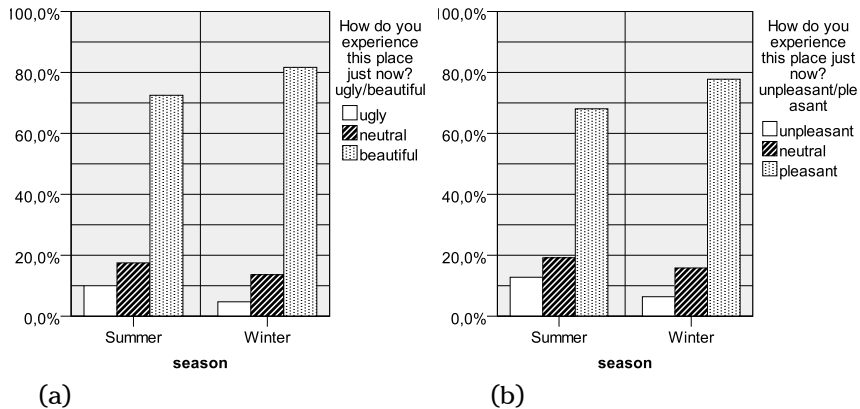


Figure 5.5 People's perception of (a) beauty and (b) pleasantness in summer and winter

## 5.7 Landscape interventions in improving thermal comfort in Damascus

The aim of this phase is to investigate how to improve the outdoor thermal comfort in Damascus during the summer and winter by studying different urban design scenarios and using different landscape elements in different hours of the day. Since PET can be used to compare the thermal comfort of different design proposals through simulations (see section 5.4), the thermal investigation was based on PET as an indicator whereas later on, PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  were applied to investigate the use of different landscape elements in urban design.

### The effect of urban design on thermal comfort

Figure 5.6 shows the PET index results at 14:00 for the E–W street orientation of the four studied cases including the base case. The figure illustrates that the urban space – pavements and the street – in the base case (Figure 5.6a) is very stressful (PET is between 51 and 58 °C). When the urban morphology is changed (Figure 4.5b), the thermal comfort is improved for the southern pavement where PET is about 36 °C (Figure 5.6b) because of the tall wall (7 m) that provides shade. In the case of trees on the pavements, thermal comfort is improved considerably both on the pavements and in the street space where PET is between 35 and 50 °C (Figure 5.6c). In the case of using shading devices together with trees on the pavements, thermal comfort is improved even more than the case of using only trees, and

the PET varies between 32 °C under shade and 48 °C in the middle of the street (Figure 5.6d). In addition, more shaded spaces are provided over the pavements for pedestrians needs. The results indicate that the last case (Figure 5.6d) is clearly better than the other cases regarding outdoor thermal comfort. In addition, it is shown that the idea of using a mixture of shading devices and trees is a good strategy to have less stressful urban spaces.

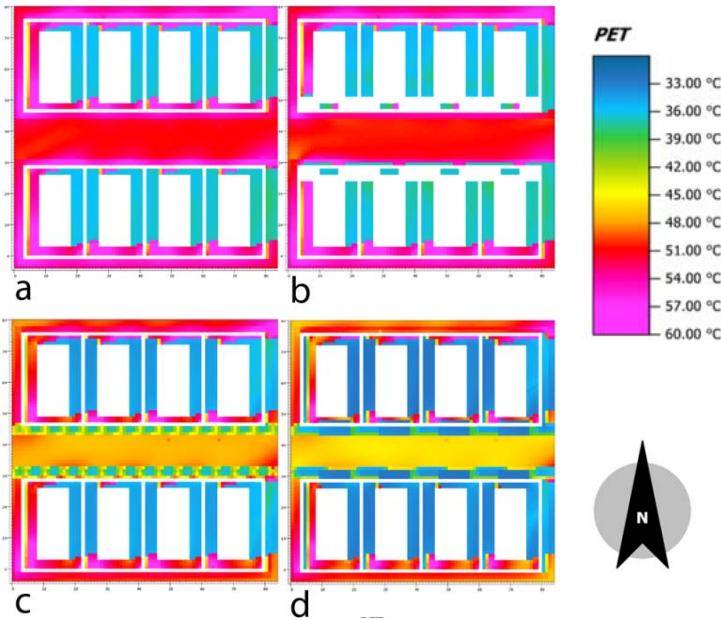


Figure 5.6 Calculated PET at 14:00 for the E-W street orientation for the cases (a) base case, (b) urban morphology, (c) vegetation and (d) vegetation and shading devices

## The effect of street orientation and seasonal differences on thermal comfort

### **PET and OUT\_SET\* in summer**

Figure 5.7 shows the PET results of different street orientations for the case street trees and shading devices (best case) compared to the base case at 14:00 during the summer time. For the base case, the results show that a N-S orientation is less stressful than E-W mainly for the west pavement (Figure 5.7b) due to the shade created by the buildings. By using street trees and shading devices, both orientations are more comfortable than the base case although N-S is a bit more stressful than E-W, especially in the spaces between buildings where the E-W orientation provides plenty of shade due to the self shading. On the other hand, the street space – in both orientations – is less stressful when trees and shading devices are used over the pavements and this is because they help to prevent the solar radiation to heat up the street when solar elevation angles are high.

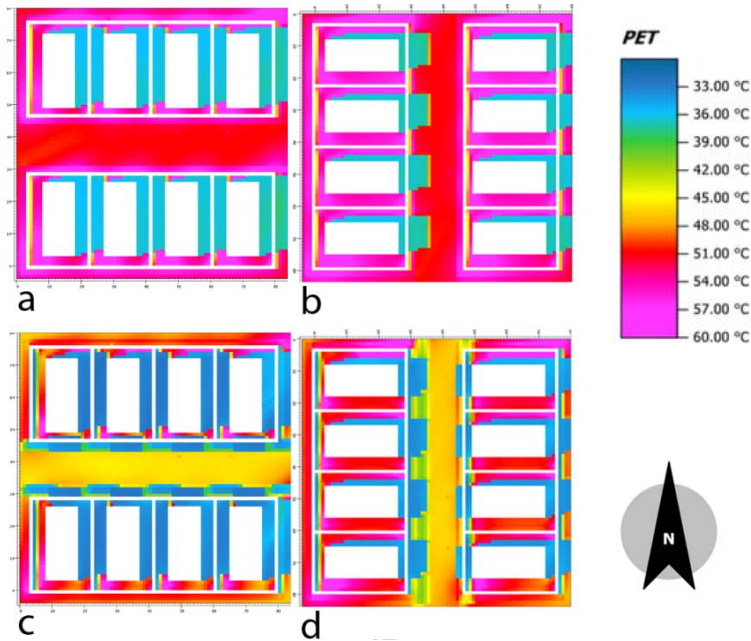


Figure 5.7 The PET results of different street orientations at 14:00 during the summer time, where: (a) base case E-W, (b) base case N-S, (c) vegetation and shading devices E-W and (d) vegetation and shading devices N-S

Figure 5.8 illustrates the OUT\_SET\* results of different street orientations for the case street trees and shading devices (best case) compared to the base case at 14:00 during the summer time. The result shows that OUT\_SET\* has the same tendency as PET (Figure 5.7) regarding the thermal comfort although OUT\_SET\* values – for both orientations – are lower than PET values. The maximum PET value in the base case for both orientations (Fig. 5.7a,b) is about 58 °C, whereas it is about 41 °C for OUT\_SET\* (Fig. 5.8a,b). In the case of trees and shading devices, the maximum PET value for both orientations (Fig. 6a,b) is about 49 °C, whereas for OUT\_SET\* (Fig. 7a,b), it is about 36 °C. Although PET and OUT\_SET\* indices have different thermal comfort scales, Figures 5.7 and 5.8 show that thermal comfort at some spots was achieved for the both indices – especially over the pavements and in the spaces between buildings.

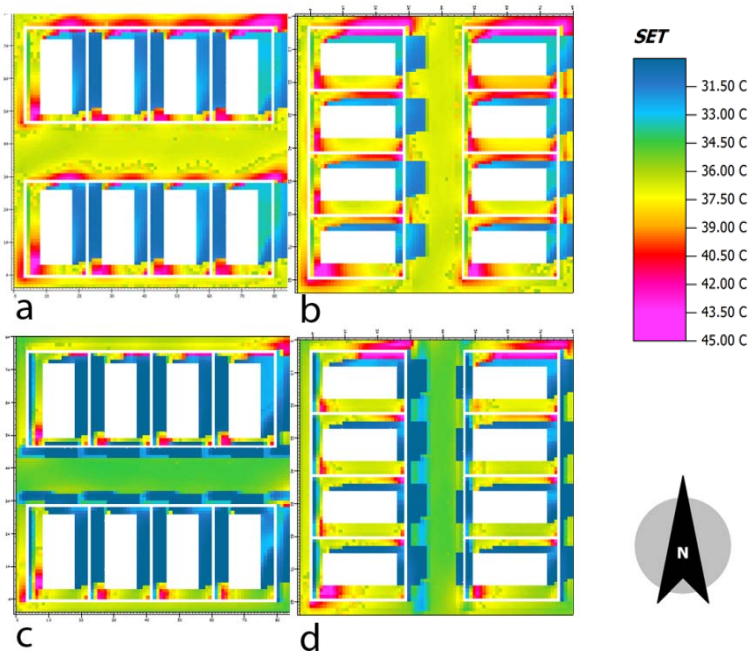


Figure 5.8 The  $OUT\_SET^*$  results of different street orientations at 14:00 during the summer time, where: (a) base case E-W, (b) base case N-S, (c) vegetation and shading devices E-W and (d) vegetation and shading devices N-S

This study deals with detached buildings, which reflect the urban planning regulations in Damascus. For the street space and the pavement in summer at 14:00, the simulations show that the N-S street orientation of the base case is less stressful than E-W for both PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  (Figures 5.7 and 5.8). This agrees with other studies of urban canyons which report that a N-S orientation is more comfortable than E-W (Ali-Toudert and Mayer, 2006; Johansson, 2006a). In contrary, E-W orientation is more comfortable than N-S in the case of the spaces between buildings (the side setbacks). This can be explained by the influence of the self-shading effect. When trees and shading devices are added, the thermal comfort for both PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  is improved for both orientations. This agrees with other studies, which report that the direct radiation under the tree canopy significantly decreases (Ochoa et al., 2009; Ali-Toudert and Mayer, 2007). Conversely, the study also shows that for the best case (street trees and shading devices) the E-W orientation is slightly less stressful than N-S at street level (Figures 5.7 and 5.8). Thus, when proper horizontal shading is provided the street orientation is less important. For streets with detached buildings in Damascus, there is only a weak influence of street orientation and aspect ratio but a strong influence of vegetation on surface temperatures and outdoor thermal comfort (Paper 1). In addition, the lateral spaces between buildings (as a result of the side setbacks) are more comfortable for the E-W orientation than for the N-S due to the self shading created by the buildings (Figures 5.7 and 5.8). Thus, this study shows that the effect of street orientation on outdoor thermal comfort for detached buildings does

not only affect the street space, but also affects the spaces between buildings. Consequently, in order to improve the thermal environment of detached urban morphologies, all spaces – including the streets and the spaces between buildings – must be taken into account in the urban and landscape design processes.

### ***PET and OUT\_SET\* in winter***

In winter, the effect of street orientation and urban design on thermal comfort is quite different from the summer time. Figure 5.9 and Figure 5.10 show the PET and OUT\_SET\* results respectively for different street orientations for the case street trees and shading devices (best case) compared to the base case at 14:00. The results illustrate that the main difference between E-W and N-S orientations for both PET and OUT\_SET\* is that there is no significant difference in maximum temperature values in the base case and the case where trees and shading devices are added. The maximum PET value of the base case for E-W (Figure 5.9a) is about 16 °C, whereas it is about 17 °C for N-S (Figure 5.9b). When trees and shading devices are added, the maximum PET value for E-W and N-S (Figures 5.9c and 5.9d) is about the same (15 °C). On the other hand, the maximum OUT\_SET\* value in the base case for E-W (Figure 5.10a) is about 23 °C, whereas it is about 24 °C for N-S (Figure 5.10b). When trees and shading devices are added, the maximum OUT\_SET\* value for E-W and N-S (Figures 5.10c and 5.10d) is similar (22 °C).

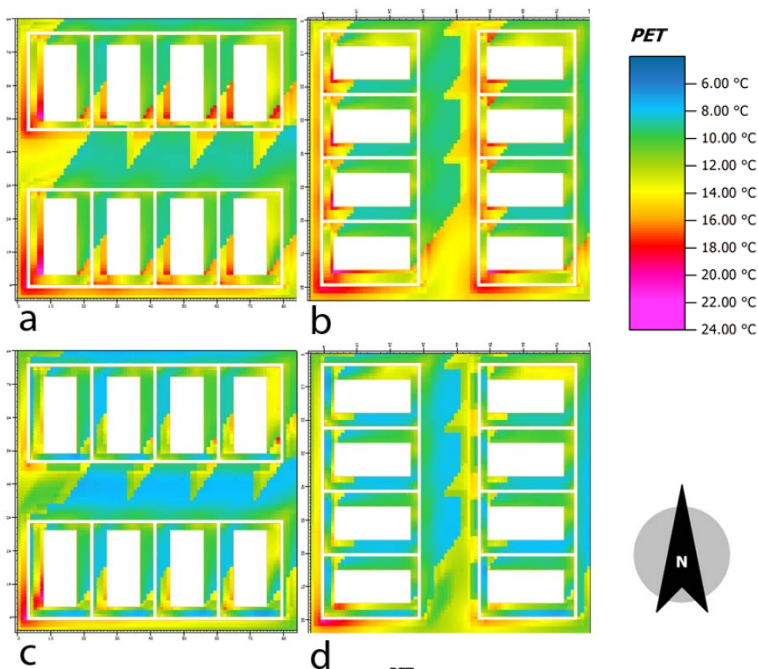


Figure 5.9 The PET results of different street orientations at 14:00 during the winter time where: (a) base case E-W, (b) base case N-S, (c) vegetation and shading devices E-W and (d) vegetation and shading devices N-S

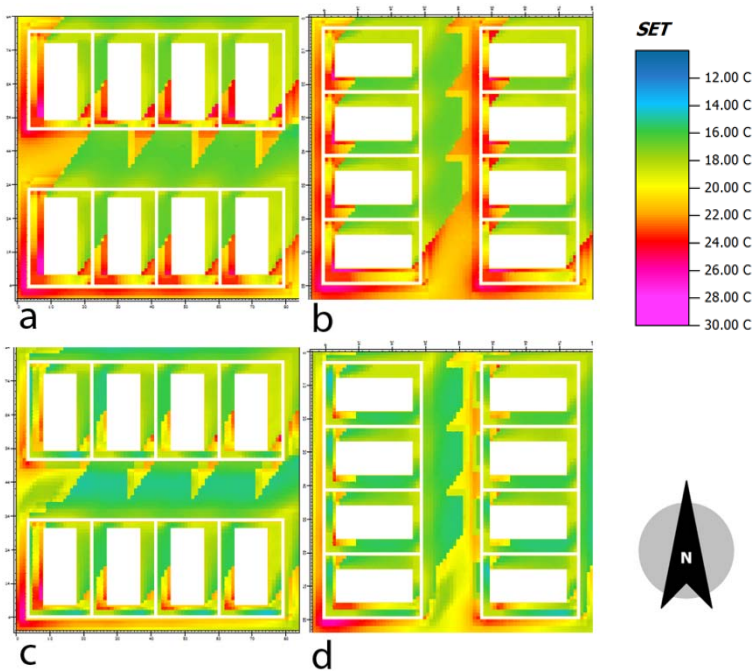


Figure 5.10 The  $OUT\_SET^*$  results of different street orientations at 14:00 during the winter time where: (a) base case E–W, (b) base case N–S, (c) vegetation and shading devices E–W and (d) vegetation and shading devices N–S

In winter, the N–S orientation is more comfortable in the early afternoon than E–W for the base case, at least the eastern pavement (Figure 5.9b and Figure 5.10b). For the E–W orientation, the building geometry affects the radiation and creates a shade which partly covers the northern pavement (Figure 5.9a and Figure 5.10a). The best case follows the same pattern although there is much more shade than in the base case due to the trees and the shading devices. The great improvement in summer for the best case thus implies slightly worsened conditions during winter. This agrees well with other studies in hot dry climate (Hedquist and Brazel, 2014) which reported that the high building density and narrow canyons are less comfortable than more open landscape during the cold days.

## Spatial and temporal variations of thermal comfort

Figure 5.11 and Figure 5.12 show the PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  values for the entire area of zones A, B and C (see Figure 4 in Paper 6) for the base and best cases for the summer, which is the most problematic season. For both indices, there is a considerable thermal comfort improvement when street trees and shading devices are used. For PET, Figure 5.11b shows that minimum and maximum values – for the case of trees and shading devices – are 30.2 °C and 49.4 °C respectively, whereas for the base case, the minimum and maximum values are 35.1 °C and 57.5 °C respectively (Figure 5.11a). The most decisive improvement occurs at 14:00 and 16:00 for the E–



W orientation and the difference between the average PET values of the base and best cases is 10.5 °C at 12:00 and 14:00. The average values of PET are clearly above the upper limit of thermal comfort. However, the minimum values are slightly below or above this limit, which shows that comfortable spots exist in the street space.

For OUT\_SET\*, the tendency is the same as for PET, (Figure 5.12). However, the values of OUT\_SET\* are closer to the thermal comfort limits and the difference between minimum and maximum values is, in general, lower. Figure 5.12b shows that minimum and maximum values for the best case are 27.9 °C and 36.3 °C respectively, whereas the minimum and maximum values for the base case are 30.1 °C and 40.6 °C respectively (Figure 5.12a). The most decisive improvement occurs also at 14:00 and 16:00 for the E-W orientation and the difference between the average OUT\_SET\* values of the base and best cases is 4.2 °C at 12:00 and 4.4 °C at 14:00. The average values of OUT\_SET\* are, with a few exceptions, a few °C above the upper limit of thermal comfort. However, all minimum values are clearly below this limit, which shows that comfortable spots exist in the street space for all studied hours.

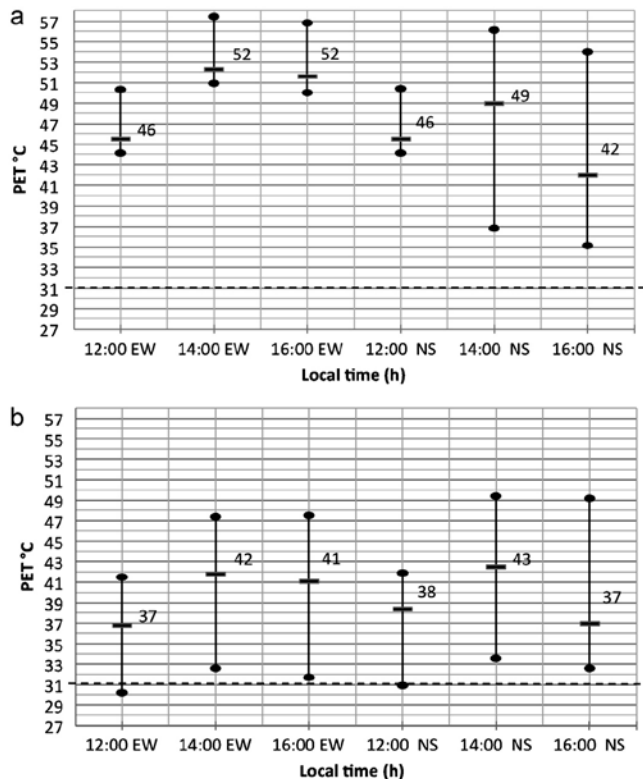


Figure 5.11 The minimum, maximum and average values of PET for different street orientations in all studied zones A, B and C (Figure 4 in Paper 6) at 12:00, 14:00 and 16:00 during the summer time where (a) the base case, (b) the best case (street trees and shading devices) and the horizontal dotted line is the upper comfort limit in summer for PET



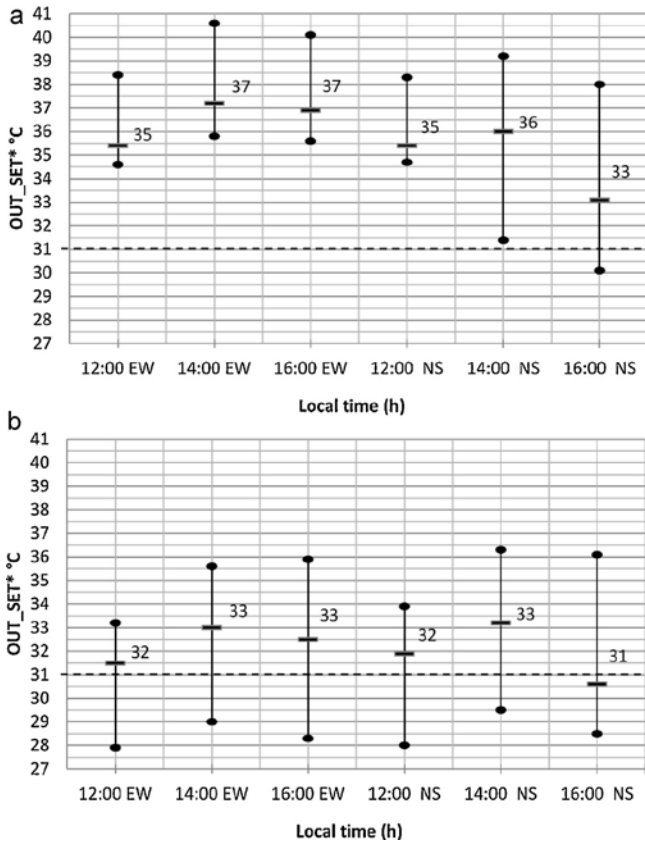


Figure 5.12 The minimum, maximum and average values of  $OUT\_SET^*$  for different street orientations in all studied zones A, B and C (Figure 4 in Paper 6) at 12:00, 14:00 and 16:00 during the summer time where (a) the base case, (b) the best case (street trees and shading devices) and the horizontal dotted line is the upper comfort limit in summer for  $OUT\_SET^*$

This study confirms that there are many spots within the pedestrian zones where comfort limits are reached (see Figures 5.7c, d and 5.8c, d). It is thus possible to achieve thermal comfort for both E–W and N–S street orientations during the warmest hours (at 12:00, 14:00 and 16:00 LT) in summer time which is the most problematic season, (see Figure 14 in Paper 6).

## 5.8 Thermal comfort evaluation for an urban design proposal

Figure 5.13 illustrates the  $OUT\_SET^*$  results of the E–W street orientation for the studied urban design at 14:00 during the summer and winter seasons. Figure 5.13a shows that in summer, the southern side of the pedestrian and vehicle street (see Figure 4.8) is totally under shade and the values of  $OUT\_SET^*$  vary between 31 °C and 32.4 °C. The northern side of this street is partly under shade at 14:00 and the values of  $OUT\_SET^*$  – at the shaded

spaces – vary between 31.2 °C and 32.5. Since the thermal comfort was calculated at pedestrian level (1.1 m height), the shaded spaces near buildings are mainly due to the projections over the level 1.1 m. Such projections prevent the solar radiation to reach the ground especially during the summer midday when the sun angle (elevation angle) is high. It should also be noted that the spaces under the horizontal parking shading devices as well as the spaces on the northern side of the vertical grapevines are shaded and the OUT\_SET\* values are between 31.4 °C and 32 °C. However, the effect of horizontal shading devices on thermal comfort seems to be more efficient than vertical devices (Figure 5.13a). Regarding the outdoor thermal comfort limits, the results show that it is possible to reach the upper limit (31.3 °C for OUT\_SET\*) (see Paper 2) during the warmest hour in the summer. This agrees well with what was found in Paper 6. Regarding the pedestrian and biking street, the results show the same tendency and the same shading patterns. However, due to the different urban design elements (see Figure 4.9) – such as trees, booths, benches with both vertical and horizontal shading devices – that are placed in the street spaces, the thermal comfort at the middle of this street space is slightly better than the space in the middle of the pedestrian and vehicle street.

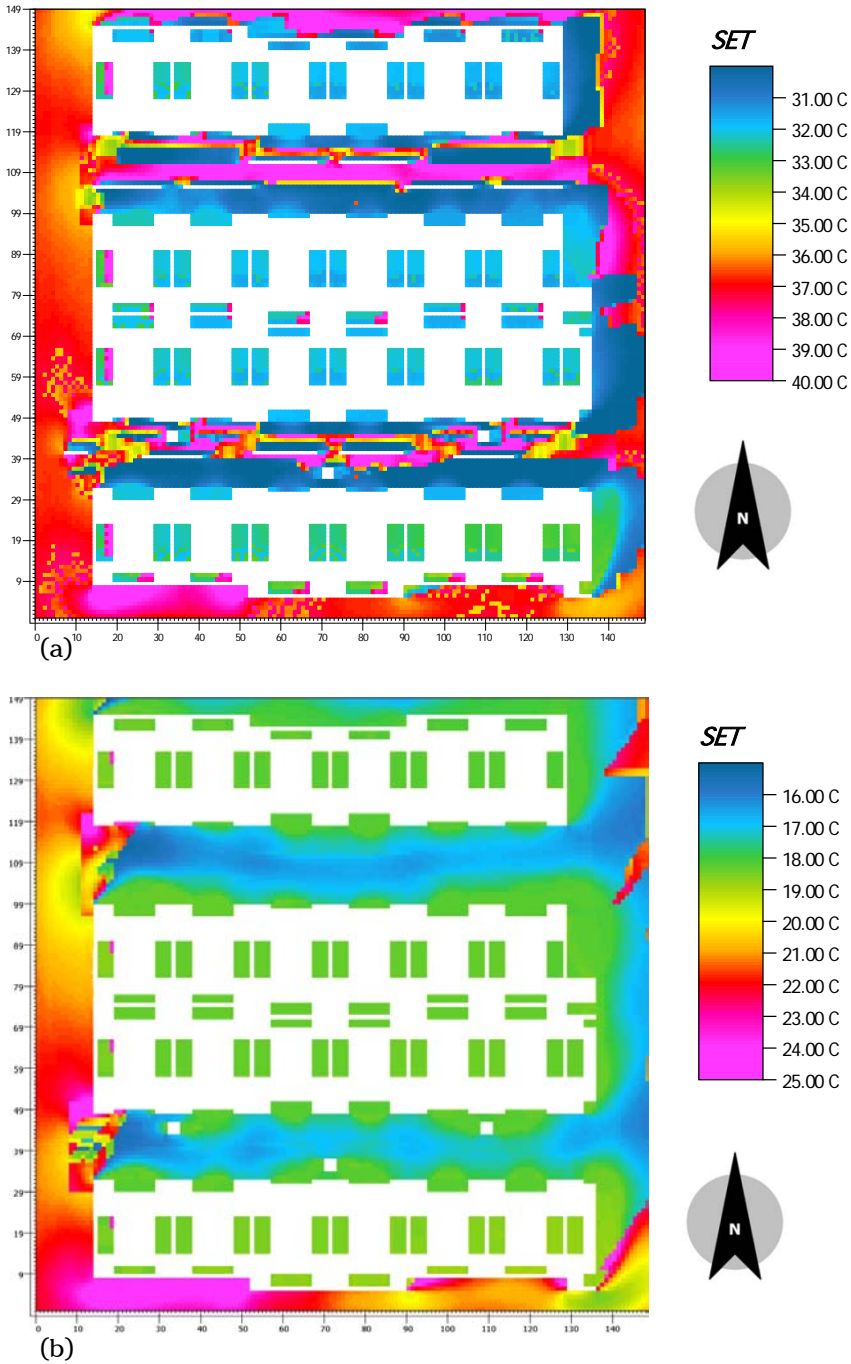


Figure 5.13 OUT\_SET\* results of the E-W street orientation for the studied urban design at 14:00 during (a) summer and (b) winter seasons

As expected, Figure 5.13b shows that in the winter time the urban morphology affects the radiation and creates a shade which almost covers the northern pavements for both street patterns. In addition, the low sun angle (elevation angle) in winter worsened the situation. Moreover, the urban design elements – such as trees, shading devices (vertical and horizontal) – play a negative role in decreasing the level of thermal comfort. This result confirms the results of the parametric study (Paper 6) – that the great improvement in summer may imply slightly worsened conditions during winter. Again, this agrees well with other studies in hot dry climate such as Hedquist and Brazel (2014) who reported that the high building density and narrow canyons are less comfortable than more open landscape during the cold days.

The obvious way to improve the level of outdoor thermal comfort in winter is the adaptation through clothing (Hedquist and Brazel, 2014). Regarding the urban design, the lack of thermal comfort during winter is mainly due to high H/W ratios and urban design elements such as landscape elements and shading devices (see Paper 6). For existing urban developments, it is not possible to remove buildings in order to improve the thermal comfort. However, the roof parapet can be redesigned to allow more solar radiation in winter to pass through and prevent – in turn – the radiation during the summer time. This can be done by using openings in the parapet. In winter, these openings will be opened and more solar radiation will pass through whereas in summer, the openings can be closed by grapevines or by other materials such as tissues, fabric or tarpaulin. In Damascus, if there is any equipment on the roof such as heating equipment, cooling equipment or water tanks, it is then recommended to hide such equipment behind a wall. Thus, the height of the parapet can exceed 3 m. To choose the right type of vegetation is also important; using non-evergreen trees can help the solar radiation to reach the ground. In addition, using flexible shading devices – that can be regulated in summer and winter – can provide a good strategy to have more radiation and heat up the area during the winter season.

For new urban residential areas in Damascus, some plots in the streets could be transformed into small public spaces. This can be an efficient solution to have more solar radiation during the winter although these spaces need protection against the solar radiation during the summer. The plots most suitable to be transformed into public spaces are the ones located on the southern side of the street. This is mainly an action to allow the winter solar radiation to reach the northern side of the street. Creating better public spaces can also enhance social contacts and improve the quality of life.



# 6 Conclusions and propositions

This Chapter shows how this research contributes to knowledge in the field of urban microclimate and thermal comfort. Moreover, it includes conclusions and propositions based on the results and discussion presented in this study. In addition, suggestions for future studies are presented.

Based on the results and discussion, a set of fundamental contributions to the field of microclimate and outdoor thermal comfort in hot dry regions are high-lighted. In general, the overall contribution is empirical. However, theoretical knowledge was also developed. The contribution to knowledge can be summarized as the following:

- 1 Evidence of the need for updating the urban planning regulations in Damascus according to microclimate and thermal comfort needs.
- 2 Empirical validation of the need of shade as opposed to existing urban planning regulations in Damascus.
- 3 Empirical definition of the summer and winter thermal comfort limits for hot dry Damascus.
- 4 Empirical validation of the urban design application based on the thermal comfort limits defined for hot dry Damascus.
- 5 Theoretical contribution to climate-conscious urban design in Damascus (the importance of using flexible urban design and landscape elements).

## 6.1 Urban planning regulations and urban design

This study analyzed the urban planning regulations in Damascus from a climatic perspective. The simulations revealed the shortcomings of the current planning regulations as regards the outdoor thermal comfort at street level in the summer time. The regulations for modern Damascus prescribe wide streets and pavements, large setbacks and relatively low building heights. This leads to a dispersed urban form where a large part of the buildings and streets are exposed to solar radiation. The existing planning regulations in Damascus have no requirements for shading for pedestrians, e.g. shading devices, arcades and projecting upper floors or shading trees. Apart from leading to poor microclimatic conditions in the summer, the land use in the modern part of Damascus is highly inefficient, with a disproportionately large amount of ground occupied by streets, pavements and yards. In the case of urban canyons, the study confirmed that the aspect ratio, street orientation, and vegetation were very important in street design. On the other hand, in urban environments consisting of detached buildings as in modern Damascus, the influence of street orientation and aspect ratio on surface temperatures and outdoor thermal comfort was less

important. Meanwhile, the use of vegetation proved to reduce surface temperatures and improve the outdoor thermal comfort substantially.

When planning future urban residential areas in Damascus, it is therefore important to update the existing urban planning regulations according to the climatic requirements. This can be done by reducing front and side setbacks or to have none at all, planning narrower streets, increase the maximum number of floors permitted, and allowing projections of upper floors. Moreover, architectural design elements, which provide shade for pedestrians at street level such as balconies and arcades, could be more used. Outdoor thermal comfort in existing urban areas in modern Damascus could also be improved by introducing vegetation and landscaping in the urban design. It is therefore important to create a link between landscape design and urban planning regulations. Such a link could be as a set of guidelines for street design and plant selection, i.e. choosing the right type of vegetation and using non-evergreen trees that can help the solar radiation to reach the ground in winter season. For future urban residential areas, this study also proposes that some plots in the streets could be transformed into small public spaces. This can be an efficient solution to have more solar radiation during the winter although these spaces need protection against the solar radiation during the summer. The plots most suitable to be transformed into public spaces are the ones located on the southern side of the street. This is mainly an action to allow the winter solar radiation to reach the northern side of the street.

Regarding the existing urban spaces in modern Damascus, this study highlighted the importance of a climate-conscious urban design and design flexibility. The study argued that the lack of thermal comfort during winter was mainly due to shade, despite the high H/W ratios and because of landscape elements. For existing urban developments, it is not possible to remove buildings in order to improve the thermal comfort. However, the roof parapet can be redesigned to allow more solar radiation in winter to pass through and prevent – in turn – the radiation during the summer time. This can be done by using openings in the parapet. In winter, these openings will be kept open and more solar radiation will pass through whereas in summer, the openings can be closed by grapevines or by other materials such as tissues, fabric or tarpaulin. In Damascus, if there is any equipment on the roof such as heating equipment, cooling equipment or water tanks, it is then recommended to hide such equipment behind this parapet. Thus, the height of the parapet can exceed 3 m. To choose the right type of vegetation is also important; using non-evergreen trees can help the solar radiation to reach the ground. In addition, using flexible shading devices – that can be regulated to give shade in summer and allow solar access in winter – will be a good strategy to have more radiation and heat up the area during the winter season.

## 6.2 Microclimate and outdoor thermal comfort limits

This study assessed the microclimate of the outdoor urban environment and investigated the relationship between different thermal comfort indices and people's actual thermal sensation in the hot dry city of Damascus. It is concluded that the thermal conditions of different outdoor environments

varied considerably, mainly as a function of solar access. In general, areas that provide shade – either by buildings, such as Old Damascus, or vegetation – were more comfortable in summer than in winter. Conversely, street canyons and parks in modern Damascus, which were open to solar access, were more comfortable in winter than in summer. Furthermore, this study defined the summer and winter thermal comfort limits for PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  in hot dry Damascus. The study found that these thermal comfort limits were much higher than for temperate climates and slightly different from other cities in hot dry or similar climates. Defining the thermal comfort limits is important information for urban designers aiming at a climate-conscious urban design. The study also showed the influence of culture and clothing traditions. While most people chose the clothing according to the climate, some people in Damascus were influenced by their cultural traditions when they chose how to dress and thus used heavy clothing in spite of the hot climate.

The study proposes that the thermal sensation of people can be improved by enhancing the urban design in Damascus city as well as by adding trees or shading devices in order to provide shade for people who pass by and linger on streets and public places. It is thus important to consider microclimate and thermal comfort in the urban design process. This can be done by providing a basic knowledge for architects, designers, and planners about the importance of microclimate and thermal comfort and how to create better urban spaces in harmony with the microclimate. Based on this knowledge, summer and winter thermal comfort limits can be used as a goal to design better urban spaces.

The conclusions of this study cannot be generalized for all hot dry cities since there are considerable variations between different cities in terms of size, planning principles, proximity to the sea, topography, etc. However, due to the similarity of climate classification, urban morphologies and urban regulations, the results of this study can be applied for different cities in Syria such as Homs, Hama, Daraa, etc. In addition, the propositions of this study can be useful to consider in other hot dry cities such as cities in the Middle East, North Africa and United States in order to create a future database on how to develop the outdoor thermal comfort and urban design in the hot dry built environments.

### 6.3 Future studies

Further studies in the field of microclimate and thermal comfort are needed in hot dry regions particularly since this and other studies have shown that the actual thermal sensation is not only affected by microclimatic parameters (air temperature, mean radiant temperature, relative humidity, and wind speed) and personal parameters such as people's activities and clothing. Thus, more studies about the relationship between the actual thermal sensation and other parameters – such as gender, age, thermal history, and people's emotional states – are needed. The thermal comfort and acceptability limits are also needed to be defined in other hot dry cities. Such limits are important to be able to develop the urban spaces in the city in harmony with microclimate. Additionally, it is important to update the existing urban planning regulations in every city according to the climatic requirements. Thus, further studies to analyze the existing regulations from a climatic point of view are needed.



For the hot dry city of Damascus, defining the thermal sensation scale from very cold to very hot as well as the comfort zone including summer, winter, autumn and spring is needed. In addition, in-depth studies about people's clothing and activities – including both summer and winter seasons – ought to be done in order to create a database to be used for improving the quality of the urban spaces. Furthermore, investigating how to create better urban design in Damascus taking into account the role of culture, thermal sensation and physical behaviour is also an example of what can be done. In the long-term perspective, further studies on urban climate in Damascus could be carried out such as creating climate maps for Damascus. Such maps will be helpful for planners and architects to see which areas are more comfortable than others so as to determine where to build new urban areas in the city.

# References

- Ali-Toudert, F.  
2005 Dependence of outdoor thermal comfort on street design in hot and dry climate. Ph.D Dissertation, Universität. Freiburg.
- Ali-Toudert, F. and H. Mayer  
2006 “Numerical study on the effects of aspect ratio and solar orientation on outdoor thermal comfort in hot and dry climate”, *Building and Environment* 41: 94–108.
- 2007 “Effects of asymmetry, galleries, overhanging facades and vegetation on thermal comfort in urban street canyons”, *Solar Energy* 81: 742–754.
- Al-Hemaidi, W.K.  
2001 “The metamorphosis of the urban fabric in an Arab-Muslim city: Riyadh, Saudi Arabia”, *Journal of Housing and the Built Environment* 16: 179–201.
- Al Jawabra, F. and M. Nikolopoulou  
2009 “Outdoor Thermal Comfort in the Hot Arid Climate, the effect of socio-economic background and cultural differences”, 26th Conference on Passive and Low Energy Architecture PLEA, Quebec City.
- Al-Kodmany, K.  
1999 “Residential Visual Privacy: Traditional and Modern Architecture and Urban Design”, *Journal of Urban Design* 04: 283–312.
- Al-Qattan, N.  
2002 “Litigants and Neighbours: The Communal Topography of Ottoman Damascus”, *Comparative Studies in Society and History* 44 (3): 511–533.
- Andrade, H., Alcoforado, M. J., and S., Oliveira  
2011 “Perception of temperature and wind by users of public outdoor spaces: relationships with weather parameters and personal characteristics”, *International Journal of Biometeorology* 55: 665–680.
- Arnfield, A.J  
2003 “Two decades of urban climate research: a review of turbulence, exchanges of energy and water, and the urban heat island”, *International Journal of Climatology* 23: 1–26.
- ASHRAE  
1997 *1997 ASHRAE Hand book: Fundamentals* (SI Edition), Atlanta: American Society of Heating, Refrigerating and Air-Conditioning Engineers.
- ASHRAE Standard 55  
2004 *Thermal environmental conditions for human occupancy*: American Society of Heating, Refrigerating and Air-Conditioning Engineers.
- Baker, L.A., Brazel, A.J., Selover, N., Martin, C., McIntyre, N., Steiner, F.R., Nelson A and L. Musacchio  
2002 “Urbanization and warming of Phoenix (Arizona, USA): impacts, feedbacks and mitigation”, *Urban Ecosystems* 6: 183–203.
- Ballantyne, E. R., Hill, R. K. and J.W. Spencer  
1977 “Probit Analysis of Thermal Sensation Assessments”, *International Journal of Biometeorology* 21: 29–43.

- Beckham, R.J.  
1980 *Shadowpack PC version 2*. Ispra, Joint Research Central-21020.
- Behsh, M.B.  
1993 Urban Towards housing in harmony with place – Constancy and change in the traditional Syrian house from the standpoint of environmental adaptation. PhD Thesis, Housing Development and Management, Lund University, Sweden.
- Berkovic, S., Yezioro, A. and A. Bitan  
2012 “Study of thermal comfort in courtyards in a hot arid climate”, *Solar Energy* 86: 1173–1186.
- Bianca, S.  
2000 *Urban Form in the Arab World: Past and Present*. London: Thames & Hudson.
- Bourbia, F. and H.B. Awbi  
2004a “Building cluster and shading in urban canyon for hot dry climate. Part 1: Air and surface temperature measurements”, *Renewable Energy* 29: 249–262.  
2004b “Building cluster and shading in urban canyon for hot dry climate. Part 2: Shading simulations”, *Renewable Energy* 29: 291–301.
- Bourbia, F. and F. Boucheriba  
2010 “Impact of street design on urban microclimate for semi arid climate (Constantine)”, *Renewable Energy* 35: 343–347.
- Bruse, M.  
2009 ENVI-met website. <http://www.envi-met.com>
- CBS  
2004 *Statistical Abstract for the year 2004, Chapter 2 : Population & Demographic Indicators*. Central Bureau of Statistics in Syria (CBC). Syrian government:  
CBS. website:  
<http://www.cbssyr.sy>.
- 2011 *Statistical Abstract for the year 2011, Chapter 1: Physical Feature*. Central Bureau of Statistics in Syria (CBC). Syrian government: CBS. website:  
<http://www.cbssyr.sy>.
- Chen, L., and E. Ng  
2012 “Simulation of the effect of downtown greenery on thermal comfort in subtropical climate using PET index: a case study in Hong Kong”, *Architectural Science Review*, 56 (4): 297–305.
- Creswell, J.W.  
1994 *Research Design: Qualitative, Quantitative Approaches*. Thousand Oaks: Sage publications.  
2013 *Research Design: Qualitative, Quantitative, and Mixed Methods Approaches*. 4th ed. Thousand Oaks: Sage publications.
- Cornford, F.M.  
2003 *Plato's theory of knowledge: The theaetetus and the sophist*. New York: Dover Publications.
- Damascus Municipality  
1997 *Construction regulations for the city of Damascus*. Damascus: Damascus Municipality. (In Arabic).
- Djenane, M., Farhi, A., Benzerzour, M. and M. Musy  
2008 “Microclimatic behaviour of urban forms in hot dry regions, towards a definition of adapted indicators”, 25th International Conference on Passive and Low Energy Architecture PLEA, Dublin.
- Dorai, M.K.  
2009 L'exil irakien à Damas. Modes d'insertion urbaine et reconfiguration des réseaux migroires, “Irakian exile in Damascus. Mode of urban inte-

- gration and reconfiguration of migration networks” *Echogeo*, 8 (non paginé), website: <http://halshs.archives-ouvertes.fr/halshs-00372155/fr/>
- Eben Saleh, M.A.  
2001 “The evolution of planning and urban theory from the perspective of vernacular design: MOMRA initiatives in improving Saudi Arabian neighbourhoods”, *Land Use Policy* 18: 179–190.
- Eliasson, I.  
2000 “The use of climate knowledge in urban planning”, *Landscape and Urban Planning* 48: 31–44.
- Eliasson, I., Knez, I., Westerberg, U., Thorsson, S and F. Lindberg  
2007 “Climate and behaviour in a Nordic city”, *Landscape and urban planning* 80: 72–84.
- El-Ibrahim, K.  
2001 *Spontaneous Settlements around the City of Damascus*, Damascus: University of Damascus.
- Emmanuel, R.  
2005 *An urban approach to climate-sensitive design: strategies for the tropics*. London: Spon Press.
- Emmanuel, R., Rosenlund, H. and E. Johansson  
2007 “Urban shading – a design option for the tropics? A study in Colombo, Sri Lanka”, *International Journal of Climatology* 27: 1995–2004.
- Encyclopaedia Britannica Online  
2007 <http://www.britannica.com/>
- Evans, J.M.  
1980 *Housing, Climate and Comfort*. London: The Architectural Press.
- Evyatar, E., Pearlmutter, D. and T. Williamson  
2011 *Urban Microclimate*. London, Washington DC: Earthscan.
- Fahmy, M., and S. Sharples  
2009 “On the development of an urban passive thermal comfort system in Cairo, Egypt”, *Building and Environment*, 44, 1907–1916.
- FIG  
2010 *Rapid Urbanization and Mega Cities: The Need for Spatial Information Management*. Research study by the International Federation of Surveyors (FIG). FIG, Copenhagen. website. <http://www.fig.net>
- Fountain, M. E. and C. Huizenga  
1994 *Using the ASHRAE thermal comfort tool*. An ASHRAE Special Publication, ASHRAE, Atlanta.
- Givoni, B.  
1976 *Man, Climate and Architecture*. New York: Van Nostrand Reinhold.
- 1998 *Climate considerations in building and urban design*. New York: Van Nostrand Reinhold.
- Grazziotin, P.C., B. Turkienicz, L. Sclovsky. and C.M.D.S. Freitas  
2004 “City-Zoom: a tool for the visualization of the impact of urban regulations”, *Proceedings of the 8th Iberoamerican Congress of Digital Graphics* 216–220.
- Groat, L., and D. Wang  
2002 *Architectural Research Methods*. New York: John Wiley & Sons.
- Hacking, I.  
1983 *Representing and Intervening: Introductory Topics in the Philosophy of Natural Science*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

- Harlan, S.L., Brazel, A.J., Prashad, L., Stefanov, W.L. and L. Larsen  
2006 "Neighborhood microclimates and vulnerability to heat stress", *Social Science & Medicine* 63(11):2847–2863.
- Harris, J.M.  
2000 Basic Principles of Sustainable Development. The Global Development and Environment Institute (GDAE), working paper 00-04.  
[https://notendur.hi.is/bdavidis/UAU101/Readings/Harris\\_2000\\_Sustainable\\_development.pdf](https://notendur.hi.is/bdavidis/UAU101/Readings/Harris_2000_Sustainable_development.pdf)
- Hashimoto, T.  
2009 Strategy and Frameworks for the Damascus City Urbanization To Guide the City Master Plan Revision, The Project for Urban Planning and Development in Damascus Metropolitan Area in the Syrian Arab Republic, DMA-UPD Discussion Paper Series No. 2.
- Hedquist, B.C. and A.J. Brazel  
2014 "The Seasonal variability of temperatures and outdoor human comfort in Phoenix, Arizona, USA", *Building and Environment* 72: 377–388.
- Höppe, P.  
1999 "The physiological equivalent temperature – a universal index for the biometeorological assessment of the thermal environment", *International Journal of Biometeorology* 43: 71–75.
- Höppe, P.  
2000 "The Physiological Equivalent Temperature (PET): An Example of a State-of-the-Art Outdoor Thermal Comfort Index", presented at internet workshop on Windchill.
- IPCC  
2013 *Climate Change 2013: The Physical Science Basis*. Working Group and Contribution to the fifth assessment report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change (IPCC), Summary for Policymakers. Switzerland: IPCC Press. website: <http://www.climatechange2013.org>.
- IRIN  
2006 Syria: Massive Investment Needed If Damascus To Avert Water Crisis', Humanitarian news and analysis (IRIN), a service of the UN Office for the Coordination of Humanitarian Affairs, website: <http://www.irinnews.org/report.aspx?reportid=61878>.
- Jendritzky, G. and W. Nübler  
1981 "A model analysing the urban thermal environment in physiologically significant terms", *Journal of Meteorology and Atmospheric Physics* 29: 313–326.
- Jendritzky, G., Staiger, H., Bucher, K., Gaetz, A., and G. Laschewski  
2000 "The perceived temperature: The method of the Deutscher Wetterdienst for the Assessment of Cold Stress and Heat load for the Human Body", Presented at Internet Workshop on Windchill.
- Jenkins, P., Smith, H., and P. Wang  
2007 *Planning and housing in the rapidly urbanising world*. London, New York: Routledge.
- Johansson, E.  
2006a "Influence of urban geometry on outdoor thermal comfort in a hot dry climate: A study in Fez, Morocco", *Building and Environment* 41: 1326–1338.
- 2006b Urban design and outdoor thermal comfort in warm climates – studies in Fez and Colombo. PhD Thesis, Housing Development and Mana-

- gement, Lund University, Sweden.
- Johansson, E. and M.W. Yahia  
2010 "Towards a Climate- Sensitive Urban Design: The Need to Modify Current Planning Regulations", 7th International Conference of the Centre for the Study of Architecture in Arab Region, Amman, Vol. 2: 293–306.
- Juvara, M.  
2012 "Urban Design-based Zoning to Guide Fast Growth", 48th isocarp congress 2012 on fast forward: planning in a (hyper) dynamic urban context, Perm, Russia.
- Katzschner, L. and S. Thorsson  
2009 "Microclimatic Investigations as Tool for Urban Design", 7th International Conference on Urban Climate (ICUC7), Yokohama, Japan.
- Kakon, A.N., Nobuo, M., Kojima, S., and T. Yoko  
2010 "Assessment of Thermal Comfort in Respect to Building Height in a High-Density City in the Tropics", *American J. of Engineering and Applied Sciences* 3 (3): 545–551.
- Khadour, y. and M. Kafa  
2009 "Discussion of Random and Informal Settlements in Damascus", *Journal of Geospatial Information Science* 12(4): 289–295.
- Knez, I. and S. Thorsson  
2006 "Influences of culture and environmental attitude on thermal, emotional and perceptualevaluations of a public square", *International Journal of Biometeorology* 50: 258–268.
- Koenigsberger, O.H., T.G Ingersoll, A. Mayhew., and S.V. Szokolay  
1974 *Manual of Tropical Housing and Building*. Part 1: Climatic Design. London: Longman.
- Lababedi, Z.  
2009 The Urban Development of Damascus: A Study of its past, present and future. MSc Dissertation, University College London, UK.
- Lau, K.L., and E. Ng  
2013 "An Investigation of Urbanization Effect on Urban and Rural Hong Kong using a 40-year Extended Temperature Record", *Landscape and Urban Planning* 114: 42–52.
- Library of Congress  
2005 Country Profile: Syria (updated), Congressional Research Service Federal Research Division, Library of Congress, Web site: <http://lcweb2.loc.gov/frd/cs/profiles/Syria.pdf>
- Lin, T.P.  
2009 "Thermal perception, adaption and attendance in a public square in hot and humid regions", *Building and Environment* 44: 2017–2026.
- Lin, T.P., de Dear, R., and Hwang, R.L.  
2011 "Effect of thermal adaptation on seasonal outdoor thermal comfort". *Internayional Journal of Climatology* 31: 302–312.
- Mahadin, K.O.  
2001 *Landscape plants for Jordan and the Middle East*. Jordan: M.K. associates.
- Mahmoud, A.H.A.  
2011 "Analysis of the microclimatic and human comfort conditions in an urban park in hot and arid regions", *Building and Environment* 46: 2641–2656.

- Makaremi, N., Salleh, E., Jaafar, M.Z., Hosein, A., and G. Hoseini  
2012 "Thermal comfort conditions of shaded outdoor spaces in hot and humid climate of Malaysia", *Building and Environment* 48: 7–14.
- Matzarakis, A., Rutz, F., and Mayer, H.  
2007 "Modelling radiation fluxes in simple and complex environments – application of the RayMan model", *International Journal of Biometeorology* 51:323–334.
- McIntyre, D.A.  
1980 *Indoor Climate*. London: Applied Science Publishers.
- Meteororm 6.0  
2013 A comprehensive meteorological reference, Website Meteororm.com
- Moore, D.S., and G.P. McCabe  
1993 *Introduction to the Practice of Statistics*. New York: Freeman and Co.
- Nikolopoulou, M., Baker, N., and K. Steemers  
2001 "Thermal comfort in outdoor urban spaces: understanding the human parameter", *Solar Energy* 70: 227–235.
- Ng, E.  
2010 *Designing high-density cities for social and environmental sustainability*. (Ed). London, New York: Earthscan.
- Ochoa, J.M. and R. Serra  
2009 "Vegetation influences on the human thermal comfort in outdoor spaces", Retrieved June 10, 2010, from School of Architecture of Barcelona, Dept. Construccions Arquitectòniques I & Dept. Física Aplicada, Web site: <http://www.fa.upc.es/personals/jroset/lyonvege.html>
- Oke, T.R.  
1987 *Boundary Layer Climates*. 2nd edition. London, New York: Routledge.
- Olgay, V.  
1963 *Design with climate-bioclimate approach to architectural regionalism*. New Jersey: Princeton.
- Pearlmutter, D., Berliner, P., and E. Shaviv  
2006 "Physical modelling of pedestrian energy exchange within the urban canopy", *Building and Environment* 41: 783–795.
- 2007 "Integrated modelling of pedestrian energy exchange and thermal comfort in urban street canyons", *Building and Environment* 42: 2396–2409.
- Pickup, J., and R.J. de Dear  
2000 "An outdoor thermal comfort index (OUT\_SET\*) – Part I – The model and its assumptions", In: de Dear, R.J. et al. (eds.), *Biometeorology and Urban Climatology at the Turn of the Millennium*. Sydney: World Meteorological Organization, p. 279–283.
- Robson, C.  
2002 *Real World Research*. 2nd ed. Oxford: Blackwell.
- Salehi, E.  
2007 "Specification of urban regulation in a sustainable city", *The International Journal of Sustainable Development and Planning* 3: Paper DOI: 10.2495/SDP070161.
- Shashua-Bar, L., Erell, E., and D. Pearlmutter  
2011 "The influence of trees and grass on outdoor thermal comfort in a hot-arid environment", *International Journal of Climatology* 31: 1498–1506.

- Spagnolo, J., and R. de Dear  
 2003 "A field study of the thermal comfort in outdoor and semi-outdoor environments in subtropical Sydney Australia", *Building and Environment* 38: 721–738.
- Tannerfeldt, G., and P. Ljung  
 2006 *More urban, less poor*. London: Earthscan.
- Thorsson, S., Lindqvist, M., and S. Lindqvist  
 2004 "Behaviour in an urban park in Göteborg, Sweden", *International Journal of Biometeorology* 48: 149–156.
- Thorsson, S., Honjo, T., Lindberg, F., Eliasson, I., and E.M. Lim  
 2007 "Thermal comfort and outdoor activity in Japanese urban public places", *Environment and Behaviour* 39: 660–684.
- UN-Habitat  
 1996 United Nations Conference on Human Settlements (Habitat II). Istanbul, Turkey, 3–14 June.
- 2001 Implementing the habitat agenda: Urban Management Programme – City Consultation Case Studies, UNCHS, Nairobi.
- 2004 Urban indicators guidelines: monitoring the Habitat Agenda and the Millennium Development Goals, UNDP, Nairobi.
- 2010 World Urban Forum 5 (WUF5), Rio de Janeiro, Brazil, 22–26 March. website: <http://unhabitat.org>.
- 2012 World Urban Forum 6 (WUF6), Naples, Italy, 1–7 September. website: <http://unhabitat.org>.
- Wessex Institute of Technology, UK  
 2011 Fifth International Conference on Sustainable Development and Planning, 12–14 July, New Forest, UK. <http://www.wessex.ac.uk/11-conferences/sdp-2011.html>
- Wifstrand, E. and J. Ria  
 2009 *Mezzeh, Damascus: Modern Damascus*.
- Yin, R.K.  
 2003 *Case study research: Design and methods*. 3rd ed. London: Sage publications.





# Appendix 1

## Damascus urban zones<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Source: Damascus urban planning regulations, Damascus municipality (translated into English by the author)

<b>Zone code</b>	<b>Land use</b>	<b>Description</b>
AG-A	Agricultural activity (A)	Only for agricultural activities – no residential buildings. It is located out of Damascus administrative limits and it is a part of the oasis (the Ghouta region) which surrounds Damascus.
AG-B	Area of protection with agricultural activity (B)	Only maintenance of existing buildings. It is located in the Kas-sioun mountain and also located on the area which surrounds urban areas to the east and to the south of the city.
AG-C	Agricultural area in the city itself (C)	Only maintenance of existing buildings.
G-D	Green area (D)	Public gardens and parks.
A	Administrative area	Only for constructing governmental buildings.
IRA	Inhabited rural areas	A residential area according to its own detailed plan. This zone contains seven villages which were in the past out of Damascus and mainly on the city's urban fringe but now they have become a part of Damascus. Mixed between residential use and commercial use. Commercial purposes should be only in the ground floor. It contains four sub-zones: 1-Old town area, 2-Old town area's expansion, 3-Modern residential areas, 4-New planning areas.
I	Industrial area	Only for industrial activities – no residential buildings.
PRA	Planned residential area	It is a purely residential zone and it contains four sub-zones: Palaces area, 1st class modern residential area, 2nd class modern residential area, 3rd class modern residential area.
OQA	Old quarters area	Residential area according to its own detailed plan in the Old quarters areas.
AUP	Areas under planning process	Residential area according to its own detailed plan after finishing its planning purposes.
REA	Residential area for future expansionism	Residential area according to its own detailed plan after finishing its planning purposes.
R-K	Residential area (K)	Mixed between residential use and commercial use. Commercial purposes should be only in the ground floor.
R-L	Residential area (L)	Mixed between residential use and commercial use, but not in the same storey. (Hotels, restaurants, commercial offices, etc).
OD	Old Damascus	Only for restoration and rehabilitation works. Mixed use (residential and commercial) according to its own regulation system.



# Appendix 2

## Glossary of terms used in the thesis

Albedo	Reflectivity.
Aspect ratio	A geometric shape and the ratio between its sizes in different dimensions. It is simply the ratio between the height and width of a street section, i.e. the same as height-to-width ratio.
Density (building)	Concentration (amount) of buildings in a given geographic area.
Density (residential)	No. of persons per unit of land (or no. of housing units per unit of land).
Floor area ratio (FAR)	The ratio between the total gross area of all the floors of a building and the plot area.
Global radiation	The sum of direct and diffuse solar radiation.
Globe thermometer	A thermometer enclosed in a black or grey painted globe used to measure the mean radiant temperature.
Land-use	The activity land is used for.
Leaf Area Density (LAD)	The total one-sided leaf area ( $m^2$ ) per unit layer volume ( $m^3$ ) in each horizontal layer of the tree.
Leaf Area Index (LAI)	The total one-sided leaf surface area ( $m^2$ ) per unit ground area ( $m^2$ ). It can be considered simply as the ratio of leaves to ground covered.
Long-wave radiation	“Low temperature” radiation, e.g. heat radiation from building surfaces.

Master plan	Document describing, in words and with maps, an overall development concept including both present land-uses as well as future land development.
Mean radiant temperature (MRT)	The temperature of an imaginary enclosure with which the human body would exchange the same radiation as with the actual environment.
Outdoor thermal comfort	The condition of mind that expresses satisfaction with the outdoor thermal environment.
Standard effective temperature index for outdoors (OUT_SET*)	An adaptation of the well-established indoor thermal index of the new standard effective temperature (SET*) to the outdoors. SET* is based on the two-node model, where the new effective temperature (ET*) is the temperature of a standard environment (relative humidity = 50%, air temperature = mean radiant temperature and wind speed <0.15 m/s) in which a subject would experience the same skin wettedness and mean skin temperature as in the actual environment. Clothing and activity are variables that affect the SET*.
Physiologically equivalent temperature (PET)	The air temperature in a typical indoor setting at which the heat balance of the human body is maintained with core and skin temperatures equal to those of the actual environment (vapour pressure = 12 hPa, air temperature = mean radiant temperature, wind speed = 0.1 m/s, clothing = 0.9 clo and activity = 80 W)
Plot coverage	The amount of a plot covered by buildings.
Setback	A required distance from the plot border to the building occupying the plot.

---

Short-wave radiation	“High temperature” radiation emitted by the sun.
Sky view factor (SVF)	The portion of the sky that can be seen from a point on a surface.
Solar altitude (elevation)	The vertical angle between the sun’s position and the horizon.
Solar azimuth	The horizontal angle of the sun in relation to north.
Urban street canyon	The space delimited by the street and the façades of the buildings along the street.
Urban design	Part of urban planning that focuses on the design of places, i.e. buildings and the three-dimensional space between them. It is often defined as an intermediate scale between architecture and urban planning.
Urban fabric	The physical aspect of urbanism, emphasizing building types, thoroughfares, open space, frontages, and streetscapes but excluding environmental, functional, economic and socio-cultural aspects.
Urban growth	The increase in urban population.
Urbanization	The growth of the proportion of urban population in a country.
Urban heat island	Urban areas being warmer than the surrounding rural areas. Primarily a nocturnal phenomenon.
Urban sprawl	Horizontal growth of a city through low-density developments.
Vapour pressure	The partial pressure of the air due to water vapour.



# Paper 1

*Originally published in Journal of Housing and Built Environment*





# Influence of urban planning regulations on the microclimate in a hot dry climate – The example of Damascus, Syria

Moohammed Wasim Yahia, Erik Johansson.  
Housing Development & Management, Lund University, Sweden.

## Abstract

Urban planning regulations influence not only the urban form; they also have a great impact on the microclimate in urban areas. This paper deals with the relationship between the urban planning regulations and microclimate in the hot dry city of Damascus. The main purpose is to highlight the shortcomings of the existing urban planning regulations. The microclimatic parameters necessary for the thermal comfort assessment of pedestrians were determined through simulations with the software ENVI-met. It is shown that the street design – as regards aspect ratio, orientation and the presence of street trees – has a great influence on ground surface temperatures and thermal comfort. Moreover, the type of buildings – whether detached or attached (street canyons) – has an impact. For deep canyons, there is an interactive relationship between aspect ratio, orientation and vegetation. However, for streets with detached buildings, there is only a weak influence of street orientation and aspect ratio but a strong influence of vegetation on surface temperatures and outdoor thermal comfort. The study shows the importance of modifying the planning regulations in Damascus for new areas to be constructed by allowing smaller setbacks, narrower streets, higher buildings, etc.

**Keywords:** Aspect ratio; Damascus; Hot dry climate; Microclimate; Planning regulations; Street design; Thermal comfort; Vegetation

## 1 Introduction

The fact that cities are warmer than its surrounding open, rural areas, especially during night time – the urban heat island effect (Oke, 1987; Voogt, 2004) – affects human comfort and energy use in buildings. Within the urban canopy layer, however, the microclimate may vary considerably as a function of the urban design (Givoni, 1998; Ali-Toudert et al., 2005; Johansson, 2006a). Urban microclimate depends both on the type of city in terms

of size, geographical location, population size and density and land use as well as street design features such as height of buildings, street widths and orientation, subdivision of the building lots, etc. In fact, the urban design of each neighbourhood in a city creates its own particular local climate (Givoni, 1998).

Previous studies of urban microclimate have focused mainly on the impact of the physical environment on climatic parameters (air temperature, relative humidity, radiation, and wind speed) in different climates such as warm humid (e.g. Johansson and Emmanuel, 2006), cold (e.g. Thorsson et al., 2004), and hot dry (e.g. Yahia and Johansson, 2011). Generally, most of the studies in hot dry climates provided new insights to improve the outdoor thermal environment. Several studies have focused on microclimate and outdoor thermal comfort in street canyons based on either simulations (e.g. Ali-Toudert and Mayer, 2006; Emmanuel et al., 2007) or measurements (e.g. Ali-Toudert et al., 2005; Johansson, 2006a; Ali-Toudert and Mayer, 2007a). Others have studied the pedestrian energy exchange depending on a physical open air scale model in urban street canyons as well as urban canopy (Pearlmutter et al., 2006; Pearlmutter et al., 2007). Some others have focused on the influence of trees and grass on outdoor thermal comfort and have studied the cooling efficiency of urban landscape strategies considering the efficiency of water use (e.g. Shashua-Bar et al., 2009; Shashua-Bar et al., 2010).

Urban microclimate and outdoor thermal comfort are generally given little importance in the urban design and planning processes (Eliasson, 2000; Johansson, 2006b). Moreover, few studies have dealt with the relationship between urban planning regulations and the local microclimate. Several studies however indicate that the existing planning regulations in hot dry climates are not adapted to the climate. In the city of Fez, Johansson (2006b) found that the intention of the current regulations is to guarantee daylight for buildings. This may be relevant for the winter period when solar elevations are low and passive heating of buildings is desired. However, during the long, warm summer, when there is a need for solar protection, this results in a very poor microclimate at street level. The worst conditions are found in areas designated for low-rise houses where plots are very large and plot coverage low. The current urban design in the modern parts of Fez stands in stark contrast to the old city where narrow alleyways and projected upper floors create adequate shade at pedestrian level.

Al-Hemaidi (2001) and Eben Saleh (2001) reported that current urban design in Saudi Arabia has led to an undesirable microclimate around buildings. They explained this with the prescription of an extremely dispersed urban design where the provision of shade is totally lacking. The current urban form is characterized by gridiron plans with wide streets where the detached, low rise "villa" is the most common type of house. Baker et al. (2002) reported from a similar experience in hot dry Phoenix, in Arizona (USA), wide streets dispersed low-rise buildings and oversized parking lots have contributed to urban warming. Bouchair and Dupagne (2003) found a similar situation in the Mزاب valley, Algeria, where contemporary urban design lacks the microclimatic qualities of the traditional cities in the region.

The urban form is strongly influenced by urban planning regulations, such as zoning ordinances, which governs spaces between buildings, building heights, building footprints, etc. Consequently, urban planning regula-

tions have a great impact on the microclimate in urban areas (Johansson and Yahia, 2010).

The street is one of the important urban components of a city's physical structure and it acts as the physical interface between urban and architectural scales. The form of the street can climatically affect both outdoor and indoor environments in terms of solar gain in summer and winter, building surfaces absorption and reflection of solar radiation, wind speed and direction and its implication for building passive cooling systems and urban ventilation. Consequently, the shape of the street influences the outdoor thermal comfort – which affects people's human health and well-being – as well as the energy use of buildings in the urban areas. Therefore, designing streets is essential for an environmental urban design (Ali-Toudert, 2005).

This paper deals with the relationship between the urban planning regulations and microclimate in the hot dry city of Damascus in Syria. The main purpose is to highlight the shortcomings of the existing urban planning regulations. This is done by assessing the thermal comfort for pedestrians as well as surface temperatures in different thermal environments within residential streets in Damascus. Whereas most previous studies have focused on street canyons (e.g. Ali-Toudert and Mayer, 2006; Perlmutter et al., 2006). This study focuses on the residential streets that have both detached and attached buildings (canyons). These two different cases represent the common outdoor urban space patterns in Damascus' built environment. This paper provides new insights to the design of residential streets and to the improvement of the existing urban regulations in Damascus from a climatic perspective.

## The city of Damascus

Damascus which is located in the south west of the Syrian Arab Republic is the capital and largest city of Syria. It is the oldest continuously inhabited city in the world and it used to be fully surrounded by an oasis (Al Ghouta). The oasis is watered by the Barada River and Al Fijeh Spring provides the city with drinking water.

Damascus has two parts: Old Damascus and modern Damascus. Old Damascus has a regular planning in general, with streets oriented N-S and E-W. Most streets are narrow with deep canyons and projecting upper floors are common. See Figure 1a. The typical architectural style in Old Damascus is simple from outside and rich from inside with internal orientation to courtyards like in most vernacular architecture of old cities in the Islamic world. This urban design came forth as a perfect response to the living conditions of both the natural and the social environment, based on age-old regional experience using local building materials and appropriate techniques of climate control (Bianca, 2000). Old Damascus' buildings are made of local construction materials such as stone, clay, wood, etc, see Figure 1a, whereas in the modern part of Damascus, modern construction materials such as concrete, steel, glass, artificial or natural stone, etc. are used. In addition, as a consequence of the planning regulations, modern Damascus has mainly detached buildings created according to detailed rules for spaces between buildings, setbacks, building heights, building footprints, projections, etc. Moreover, buildings are outwardly orientated. See Figure 1b.

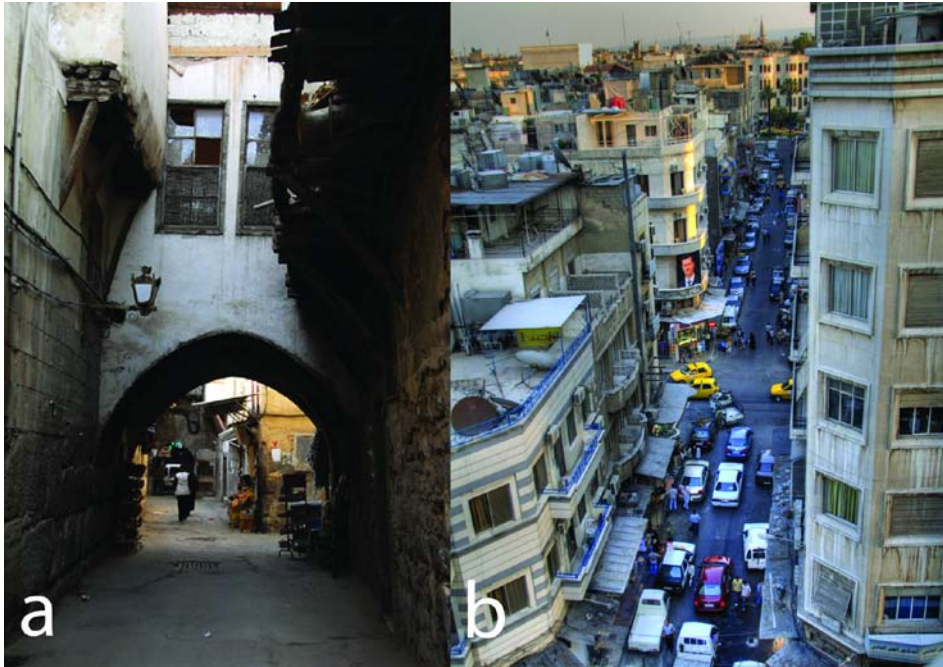


Figure 1 (a) Typical style for streets in Old Damascus. Projected upper floors increase shade at street level. (b) Typical streets and buildings in the modern part of Damascus.

## Climate in Damascus

Damascus has sunny summers (June to August) and fairly cold winters (December to February). Snowfall is common in winter on the mountains surrounding the city. Summer temperatures can reach in excess of 35°C during the day, but evenings are generally cool. In winter, minimum temperatures can reach 0°C. Spring and autumn have the most comfortable climate with average temperatures in the range of 16 to 20°C.

## 2 Urban planning regulations in Damascus

The urban planning regulations in Damascus are the essential documents for regulating urban and buildings issues in the city. Literally, the name of this document translated from Arabic is building regulations for the city of Damascus (Damascus Municipality, 1997)

The approach to urban design changed radically during the French colonial period (1920–45). New areas were built with wide streets in a grid pattern and buildings were outwardly oriented (Al-Kodmany, 1999). During the 1950s, it was necessary to develop a new master plan for Damascus. The first attempt was by an Austrian company in 1957 and the second one started in 1963 by the French architect Michel Ecochar. In 1968 Ecochar presented the new master plan for Damascus and a few years earlier he

had developed new urban planning regulations for the city; these regulations determined urban form in Damascus during a period of 20 years (1965–1985). Ecochar's master plan and urban planning regulations are essential documents which have been the basis for all updated versions after 1985.

In 1993, a special committee – from the Syrian Engineers Association and Damascus Municipality – was created in order to study, develop and complete the urban planning regulations for Damascus. The latest urban planning regulations were issued by Damascus Municipality in 1997 and were ratified by the Syrian Ministry of Housing and Construction in the same year.

The first part of the urban planning regulations contains special conditions about administrative procedures concerning building permit, public roads and protection procedures during the construction process such as fire and safety protection.

The second part contains rules concerning building heights, projections, partitions and barriers between the plots, ventilation and illumination shafts, residential and commercial units and components, common facilities such as stairs and corridors, architectural elevations, roof forms as well as general regulations about street width, setbacks, and parking.

The third part contains regulations regarding maximum floor area ratio (FAR) which is calculated as the total floor area of the building divided by the total area of the plot. The third part also contains regulations about the basement construction in case of sloping plots, regulations for small apartments in the commercial areas, temporary building conditions, and fire protection.

The fourth part which deals with urban zones for Damascus contains specific regulations on minimum plot sizes, minimum plot frontages, minimum setbacks, maximum building heights, maximum plot coverage (building footprints), maximum projections, etc (see Table 1 and Figure 2). In addition, these regulations determine the division of Damascus into urban land use zones. Damascus is divided into 14 zones of different land use including agricultural, administrative, industrial, residential, and commercial activities. The urban zones which deal with residential areas – planned residential area (PRA) and for the zone of Inhabited rural area (IRA) – are described in Table 1.

Parts 5, 6 and 7 contain, respectively, general information about hospitals as well as electrical and mechanical installations. There are also two appendices, the first one is about urban planning regulations for Old Damascus, and the second is about heating systems and cold water generation for cooling.

Table 1 Urban planning regulations pertaining to urban form in the city of Damascus for the zone of planned residential area (PRA) and for the zone of Inhabited rural area (IRA)\*.  
Source: Damascus urban planning regulations (Damascus Municipality, 1997).

Zone code	Type of area	Type of use	Plot size (m <sup>2</sup> )	Max. Plot coverage** (%)	Max. no. of floors**	Max. H (m)	Min. plot frontage (m)	Min. setbacks (m)		
								Front	rear	side
PRA	Palaces area	Residential	> 1500	20%	no limit	10	—	10	10	10
PRA	1 <sup>st</sup> class modern residential area	Residential	> 600	33.3% See Figure 2	3+B	14	—	5	5	5
PRA	2 <sup>nd</sup> class modern residential area	Residential	> 400	50%	3+B	14	—	3	3	3
PRA	3 <sup>rd</sup> class modern residential area	Residential	> 200	66.6%	3+B	12	—	—	—	—
IRA	Inhabited rural area (Old town area)	Residential, commercial	> 125	= 5X+ 2/3.X (Y-5). see Figure 2	4+B	14.25	> 8	—	—	—
IRA	Inhabited rural area (Old town area expansion)	Residential, commercial	> 150	= 5X+ 2/3.X (Y-5). see Figure 2	4+B	14.25	> 9	—	—	—
IRA	Inhabited rural area (Modern residential area)	Residential, commercial	> 300	50%	4+B	14.25	> 14	3	7	—
IRA	Inhabited rural area (New planning area)	Residential, commercial	> 600	40%	4+B	15	> 20	3	4	5

B= Basement; H = Building height.

\*This zone consists of neighborhoods situated outside the core of Damascus and surrounded by green areas.

\*\* The maximum FAR (Floor Area Ratio) can be calculated by multiplying the maximum plot coverage with the maximum number of floors.

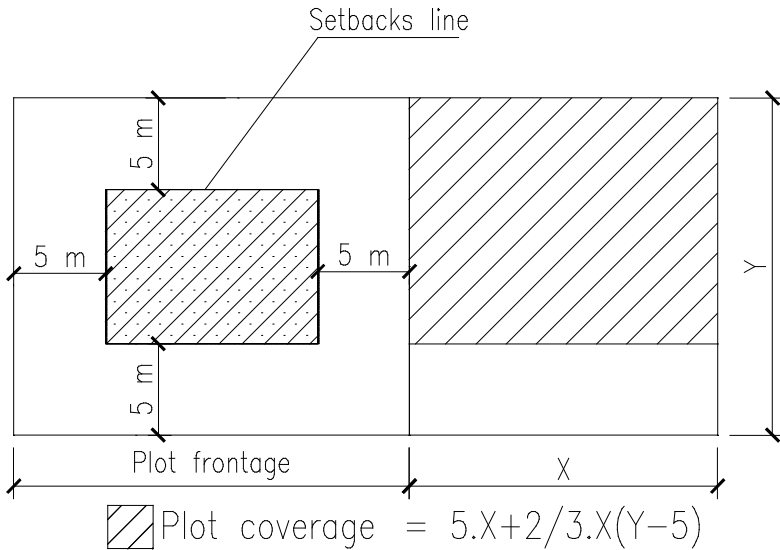


Figure 2 Two examples of setbacks, plot coverage and plot frontage. (a) Front, side and rear setbacks for zone PRA (1st class modern residential area). (b) The formula to calculate the maximum plot coverage and front setback for IRA zone where  $X$  = the plot frontage and  $Y$  = the dimension of the side of the plot.

### 3 Methodology

#### Selection and characteristics of the studied zones

This study focuses on the three land use zones that represent the main residential urban zones in Damascus (See Table 1):

- 1 The zone of Planned residential areas (PRA) exemplified by the sub zone palaces area in modern Damascus. This zone contains only detached buildings (Figure 3a).
- 2 The zone of Inhabited rural area (IRA) exemplified by the sub zone new planning area in modern Damascus. This zone also contains only detached buildings (Figure 3b).
- 3 The zone of Old Damascus (OD). This zone contains only attached buildings (Figure 3c).



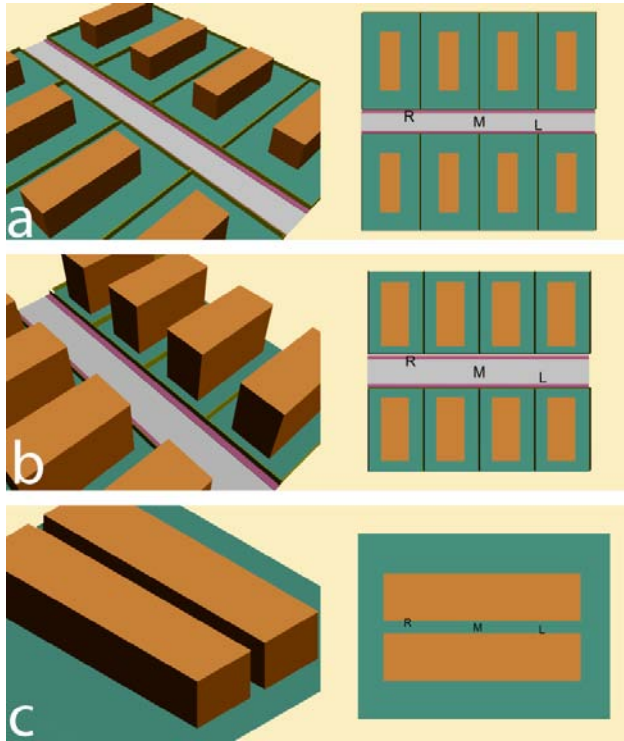


Figure 3 Perspective models of the studied zones for (a) PRA (Palaces area), (b) IRA (New planning area) and (c) OD (Old Damascus) including the 2 m high wall which surrounds the plots. The ground surface temperature and the thermal comfort were studied at the right side of the street (point R), at the middle of the street (point M) and at the left side of the street (point L.)

For modern Damascus, the models have been created according to urban planning regulations, whereas in Old Damascus, the dimensions for the model were derived from existing street.

The study was carried out only at street level since the street in Damascus is the most common public space; this is the main place where people everyday stroll and pass by for different reasons such as going to work and shopping as well as for recreational purposes.

The three zones were mainly chosen in order to test the impact of various aspect ratios, i.e. height-to-width ratios (H/W) on the microclimate. The palaces area of the PRA zone has the lowest H/W ratio (0.31) and the new planning area of the IRA zone has a H/W ratio of 0.83, whereas Old Damascus (OD) zone has the highest H/W ratio (2.95). The chosen zones include two extremes in the city of Damascus where the palaces area of the PRA zone is the most dispersed (lowest density) and Old Damascus is the most compact (highest density). The residential area of the IRA zone is somewhere in between. The PRA (Palaces area), IRA (New planning area) and OD zones are clearly different concerning the distance between buildings, building heights, H/W ratio, and building footprint (See Figure 3 and Table 1).

## Microclimate simulations

The microclimate at street level was simulated with ENVI-met 3.0 (Bruse, 2009). The programme uses a three-dimensional computational fluid dynamics and energy balance model. The model has a high spatial and temporal resolution enabling a detailed study of how the microclimate varies within the studied space over time. The model gives a large amount of output data including the necessary variables to be able to calculate thermal comfort indices. A simulation study such as this one has the advantage that an unlimited numbers of points from the model can be analyzed, whereas in a measurement study, only the results derived from the measured spots are reliable.

The input data for the simulation model contained the physical properties of the studied urban areas (buildings, soil and vegetation) and limited geographical and meteorological data. The input data used in this study is shown in Table 2 and included meteorological data from the station Kharabo near Damascus.

Table 2 Basic input configuration data applied in the ENVI-met simulations.

Configuration data	
Start of simulation (h)	6:00
Wind speed at 10 m above ground level [m/s]	1
Wind direction	E-W , N-S*
Initial temperature of the atmosphere [in degrees Kelvin]	303
Solar adjustment factor**	0.85
Specific humidity [g/m <sup>3</sup> ]	7
Relative humidity at 2m [%]	50
Initial Temperature Upper Layer (0–20 cm) [K]=291	291
Initial Temperature Middle Layer (20–50 cm) [K]	293
Initial Temperature Deep Layer (below 50 cm)[K]	298
Relative humidity in all layers [%]	25
Albedo of walls for buildings	0.3
Albedo of roofs for buildings	0.3

\* The wind direction was always parallel to the street.

\*\* The solar radiation, which is calculated depending on latitude, was slightly over-estimated by ENVI-met for Damascus conditions and was therefore decreased to 85%.

The study was carried out on the 21st of July since this month is the hottest during summer time according to meteorological data from the Kharabo station. The simulated period lasted from 7:00 in the morning until 16:00 in the afternoon in order to include the maximum air and surface temperatures which normally occur at 14:00. In this study, both east–west (E–W) and north–south (N–S) street orientations were investigated. In modern Damascus, the street width was 12 m since this width is the most common one. On the other hand, the width of the studied street in Old Damascus was 3.8 m and it was derived from a real street. See Figure 4.

In the ENVI-met simulation program (version 3), the walls of the buildings have no thermal mass. Therefore, the surface temperatures calculated by ENVI-met will be overestimated, especially in Old Damascus where the walls on the ground floor have high thermal mass. Another shortcoming with ENVI-met is that the effect of motor traffic is not considered. However, since the study focused on residential streets and not on the centre of Damascus, the impact of motor traffic is likely to be negligible.

## Assessment of thermal comfort

Thermal comfort is defined as the condition of mind, which expresses satisfaction with the thermal environment (Plumley, 1975). There are four environmental variables affecting the thermal comfort of the human body: air temperature, mean radiant temperature, air humidity and air speed. Additionally, several personal variables influence thermal comfort: clothing, the level of activity, height, weight, age, and gender. However, of these, clothing and the level of activity have the largest impact on thermal comfort (Givoni, 1998).

The mean radiant temperature (MRT) is defined for the real environment in practice (actual non-uniform enclosure) as “the uniform temperature of an imaginary enclosure in which radiant heat transfer from the human body equals the radiant heat transfer in the actual non-uniform enclosure” (ASHRAE, 1997). In the outdoor environment, it is complicated to determine MRT because the body exchanges radiation with various sources. The human body receives direct, diffuse and reflected solar radiation. Moreover, the body exchanges thermal (long-wave) radiation with the sky, with urban surfaces and with objects such as trees. The magnitude of the radiation from the different sources varies greatly in space and time. The MRT is calculated by ENVI-met for a standing person taking all radiation aspects mentioned above into account (Ali-Toudert and Mayer, 2006).

The most commonly used thermal comfort indices are based on the heat balance of the human body, e.g. the predicted mean vote (PMV), the new effective temperature ( $ET^*$ ), the standard effective temperature ( $SET^*$ ), and the physiologically equivalent temperature (PET). These indices have in common that they take into account all environmental variables influencing thermal comfort (Ali-Toudert, 2005).

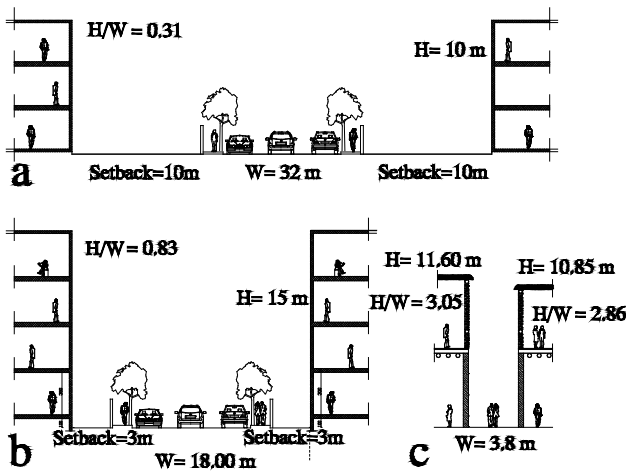
In this study, thermal comfort was estimated by calculating the PET index (Höppe, 1999). PET, which is expressed in °C, is based on the human energy balance model MEMI and includes the physiological thermoregulatory processes of human beings in order to adjust to a climatic situation outdoors (Ali-Toudert and Mayer, 2006). The thermal comfort zone for the PET index was originally defined as 18–23°C. This range applies to European climatic conditions (Germany). A recent study in the warm humid climate of Taipei, Taiwan, found a PET summer comfort zone for Taiwan as being 21.3–28.5°C which is considerably higher than Western/middle European scale (Ping Lin, 2009). Although PET has not been calibrated for Damascus, the index makes it possible to compare different urban designs.

The PET index was calculated with RayMan (Matzarakis, 2000) using input data from the ENVI-met simulations (MRT, air temperature and RH) and from the meteorological station in Kharabo (wind speed).

For the three studied zones, the PET index was calculated at pedestrian level (1.1 m height) for three points of the street: both pavements and the middle of the street. The positions of the studied points for which the surface temperature and PET has been calculated are shown in Figure 3 for the PRA and IRA zones. In the case of Old Damascus, the studied points are located in the deep urban canyon near the building facades and in the middle of the street.

## The impact of street trees on thermal comfort

In order to evaluate the impact of vegetation, rows of trees were added on the pavements in both the PRA and IRA zones, see Figure 4. The street trees affect outdoor thermal comfort mainly in points R and L. No street trees



were added in Old Damascus due to the lack of space.

Figure 4 Typical sections and H/W ratio for (a) PRA zone, (b) IRA zone, and (c) OD zone with rows of trees on the pavements for IRA and PRA zones.

## 4 Results and discussion

This section presents the results of surface temperatures and thermal comfort, expressed as the PET index, as well as the influence of vegetation on surface temperatures and PET.

### The influence of H/W ratio and orientation on surface temperature and PET

The surface temperatures in all three studied zones between 07:00 and 16:00 at the three points (L, R and M) are shown in Table 3. As can be seen in the table, the highest surface temperatures in modern Damascus are in the middle of the streets (M) where temperatures reach as high as  $48^{\circ}\text{C}$ . The temperature difference between the pavements (positions L and R) is very small in both the PRA and IRA zones. For these zones – which consist detached buildings in modern Damascus – the influence of street orientation on surface temperatures is not decisive. On the other hand, for both E-

W and N-S orientation, the surface temperatures of the two zones in modern Damascus are considerably higher than those of Old Damascus because in the latter case the street has a much higher H/W ratio. The street in Old Damascus is in shade during all hours of the simulation except at around noon for the N-S case as well as at around 10:00 and around 15:00 for the E-W case since the azimuth is nearly parallel to the street orientation for these hours. Surface temperatures in Old Damascus are normally similar in all points and rarely above 35°C.

Table 3 Surface temperatures in all three studied zones, for (a) E-W and (b) N-S orientations, between 07:00 and 16:00 at the three points (L, R and M). L = left pavement, R = right pavement and M = middle of the street.

Time	PRA			IRA			OD		
	L	R	M	L	R	M	L	R	M
07:00	23.9	21.9	24.9	23.2	22.2	24.9	25.3	21.6	21.0
08:00	30.6	24.6	33.8	30.4	24.7	33.8	32.7	31.5	27.5
09:00	35.7	27.0	38.9	35.2	26.9	38.9	36.7	31.6	28.5
10:00	39.5	33.7	42.9	38.7	28.6	42.9	40.0	32.0	30.3
11:00	42.3	39.8	45.7	41.2	35.4	45.7	35.1	32.8	32.0
12:00	44.2	42.7	47.3	43.0	41.3	47.3	35.1	33.7	33.5
13:00	45.4	44.4	48.0	38.3	43.6	48.0	35.3	34.5	34.7
14:00	40.3	45.0	47.5	36.5	44.4	47.5	35.6	35.1	35.7
15:00	38.2	44.3	45.7	35.9	43.8	45.7	40.6	38.9	37.2
16:00	37.0	42.7	42.9	35.2	42.0	42.9	37.8	39.5	40.1

(a)

Time	PRA			IRA			OD		
	L	R	M	L	R	M	L	R	M
07:00	25.0	24.3	27.8	25.7	22.8	28.0	20.9	21.0	21.0
08:00	30.8	30.5	34.7	30.9	30.2	33.6	23.4	23.6	23.6
09:00	35.7	35.5	40.0	35.5	35.2	38.3	25.8	26.1	26.0
10:00	39.3	39.3	43.7	38.8	38.9	41.8	28.0	28.4	28.3
11:00	41.9	42.1	46.3	41.2	41.5	44.2	30.1	30.5	30.4
12:00	43.8	44.1	47.9	42.8	43.3	45.7	38.1	38.4	39.0
13:00	44.9	45.2	48.6	43.5	44.2	46.4	34.6	34.8	35.7
14:00	45.1	45.4	48.2	43.5	44.2	46.0	35.0	35.2	35.6
15:00	44.2	44.5	46.6	42.6	43.2	44.6	35.3	35.5	35.7
16:00	42.3	42.6	43.9	40.9	41.4	42.1	35.4	35.5	35.6

(b)

Table 4 shows the influence of H/W ratio on the PET index at 14:00 in the PRA, IRA and OD zones. At this hour, PET reaches its maximum value. The table illustrates the high PET values in both PRA and IRA zones in modern Damascus (PET around 50°C). These values are far above the thermal com-

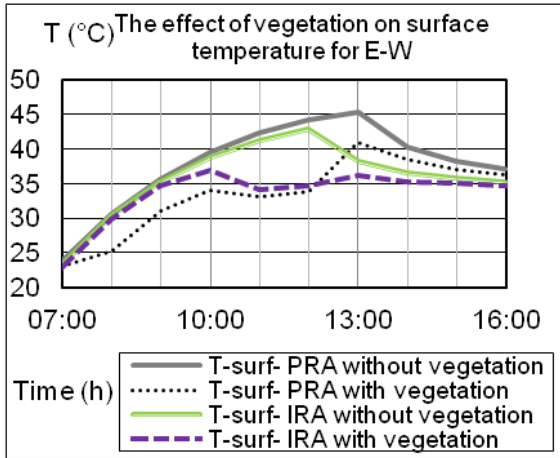
fort zones mentioned in Section 3.3. On the other hand, PET in Old Damascus zone (OD) is around 33°C. However, within each studied zone there is no decisive difference in PET value between the studied points R, L, and M. The main reason is that in zones PRA and IRA, both for E–W and N–S orientation, all points are exposed to solar radiation, whereas in the OD zone, all points are in shade. Furthermore, for the PRA and IRA zones with H/W equal to 0.31 and 0.83 respectively, the maximum PET reaches the value of 51.7°C and 50.7°C respectively. On the other hand, in Old Damascus with a higher H/W ratio equal to 2.95, the maximum PET value reaches only 33.2°C. The results show that the H/W ratio has a large impact on outdoor thermal comfort and that the PET tends to decrease with increasing H/W. The small difference in PET values between the PRA and IRA zones is explained by the small difference in the aspect ratio as discussed for the surface temperatures above. The main reason for the lower PET in the OD zone is the reduction of radiation fluxes due to increased shading which results in a lower mean radiant temperature. The results agree well with other studies in hot dry climates which found that outdoor thermal comfort is affected by H/W ratio variation (Ali-Toudert and Mayer, 2006; Johansson, 2006a). Table 4 also shows only a small influence of orientation on PET in modern Damascus. This is because this study deals with detached buildings and not canyons. Consequently, in urban environments that have detached buildings, the influence of street orientation and aspect ratio on outdoor thermal comfort is not decisive. Other studies for urban canyons (Ali-Toudert and Mayer, 2006; Johansson, 2006b) have shown that in general N–S streets tend to be more comfortable than E–W streets. This is because a N–S street is exposed to solar radiation during a shorter period than an E–W street. The simulated PETs in modern and Old Damascus are similar to measured values in other hot dry cities (Ali-Toudert et al., 2005; Johansson, 2006a).

Table 4 The influence of H/W ratio on PET values in PRA, IRA, and OD urban zones for east–west (E–W) and for north–south (N–S) street orientations (maximum daily values at 14:00).

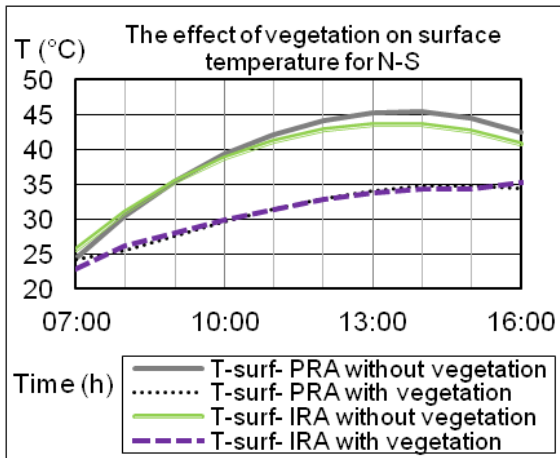
Zone	PET°C (E–W)			PET°C (N–S)		
	L	R	M	L	R	M
<b>PRA Zone H/W= 0.30</b>	49.9	51.7	49.4	45	52.1	48.8
<b>IRA Zone H/W= 0.83</b>	50.7	50.4	48.5	50	50.7	48.4
<b>OD Zone H/W= 2.95</b>	33.2	33.2	33.2	33.2	33.2	33.3

## The influence of vegetation on surface temperature and PET

The hourly variations of the surface temperatures in the PRA and IRA zones at the left pavement (point L) with and without rows of trees along the pavements for E–W and N–S orientations are shown in Figure 5. The figure shows that the surface temperatures below the trees are considerably lower than for an exposed surface in both E–W and N–S street orientations.



(a)



(b)

Figure 5 Hourly variations of the surface temperatures in the PRA and IRA zones with and without rows of trees along the pavements for (a) E-W and (b) N-S orientations.

Table 5 illustrates the effect of street trees on thermal comfort expressed as the maximum daily PET value in both the PRA and IRA zones. The result reveals that there is a great influence of vegetation on PET since when rows of trees are added on the pavement, PET values are lowered by about 17°C for the PRA and by about 16°C for the IRA zone due to the shading of the pedestrian pavement. Consequently, in urban environments that have low aspect ratios as well as detached buildings, the influence of vegetation on outdoor thermal comfort is crucial. This result agrees well with other studies which found that the direct solar radiation under a tree canopy strongly decreases (Ochoa et al., 2009; Ali-Toudert and Mayer, 2007b).

Table 5 The influence of street trees on PET values in PRA and IRA urban zones (maximum daily values at 14:00).

	PET without vegetation	PET with vegetation
<b>PRA Zone H/W= 0.30</b>	52.1°C	35.3°C
<b>IRA Zone H/W= 0.83</b>	50.7°C	34.3°C

## 5 Conclusions

The results reveal the shortcomings of the current planning regulations in Damascus city as regards the outdoor thermal comfort at street level. The regulations for modern Damascus prescribe wide streets and pavements, large setbacks and relatively low building heights. This leads to a dispersed urban form where a large part of the buildings and streets are exposed to solar radiation.

The existing planning regulations in Damascus have no requirements for shading of pedestrians, e.g. shading devices, arcades and projecting upper floors or shading trees. Apart from leading to poor microclimatic conditions in the summer, land-use in the modern part of Damascus is highly inefficient, with a disproportionately large amount of ground occupied by streets, pavements and front yards.

In order to increase shade at street level in future urban areas in Damascus it is important to modify the current planning regulations. This can be done by reducing front setbacks or to have none at all, planning narrower streets, increase the permissive maximum number of floors, and allowing projections of upper floors. Moreover, architectural elements, which provide shade for pedestrians at street level such as balconies and horizontal shading devices, should be encouraged in the urban planning regulations.

In the case of urban canyons (attached buildings), one conclusion of this and other studies (e.g. Ali-Toudert and Mayer, 2007b) is that it is very important to consider the interactive relationship between aspect ratio, street orientation, and vegetation when designing streets. On the other hand in urban environments that have detached buildings, the influence of street orientation and aspect ratio on surface temperatures and outdoor thermal comfort is less important, whereas the use of vegetation may reduce surface temperatures and improve the outdoor thermal comfort substantially.

Consequently, the outdoor thermal comfort in existing urban areas in modern Damascus – which were constructed according to the current urban planning regulations – could be improved by introducing vegetation and landscaping in the urban design process. The use of vegetation would also have a positive influence on air quality as well as the quality of life. It is therefore important to create a link between urban landscaping and urban planning regulations and this link could be as a set of guidelines for street design.

This study is limited only to a numerical simulation study of summer conditions. However, the study is part of larger project about climate-sensitive urban design in the city of Damascus, and microclimatic measurements will be carried out in order to calibrate the results of this study. More investigations, including both the summer and winter seasons, will be performed within the framework of the project including field studies about the influence of microclimate on outdoor thermal comfort, guidelines for a



climate-sensitive urban design and suggestions for improvement of the urban planning regulations in the city of Damascus.

## References

- Al-Hemaidi, W.K. (2001). The metamorphosis of the urban fabric in an Arab-Muslim city: Riyadh, Saudi Arabia. *Journal of Housing and the Built Environment*, 16, 179–201.
- Al-Kodmany, K. (1999). Residential Visual Privacy: Traditional and Modern Architecture and Urban Design. *Journal of Urban Design*, 04, 283–312.
- Ali-Toudert, F. (2005). Dependence of outdoor thermal comfort on street design in hot and dry climate. Ph.D Dissertation, Universität Freiburg.
- Ali-Toudert, F., Djenane, M., Bensalem, R. & Mayer, H. (2005). Outdoor thermal comfort in the old desert city of Beni-Isguen, Algeria. *Climate Research*, 28, 243–256.
- Ali-Toudert, F. & Mayer, H. (2006). Numerical study on the effects of aspect ratio and solar orientation on outdoor thermal comfort in hot and dry climate. *Building and Environment*, 41, 94–108.
- Ali-Toudert, F. & Mayer, H. (2007a). Thermal comfort in an east–west oriented street canyon in Freiburg (Germany) under hot summer conditions. *Theoretical and Applied Climatology*, 87, 223–37.
- Ali-Toudert, F. & Mayer, H. (2007b). Effects of asymmetry, galleries, overhanging facades and vegetation on thermal comfort in urban street canyons. *Solar Energy*, 81, 742–754.
- ASHRAE (1997). *ASHRAE Handbook: Fundamentals*. (Atlanta: American Society of Heating, Refrigerating and Air Conditioning Engineers).
- Baker, L.A., Brazel, A.J., Selover, N., Martin, C., McIntyre, N., Steiner, F.R., Nelson A. & Musacchio, L. (2002). Urbanization and warming of Phoenix (Arizona, USA): impacts, feedbacks and mitigation, *Urban Ecosystems*, 6, 183–203.
- Bianca, S. (2000). *Urban Form in the Arab World: Past and present*. (London: Thames & Hudson).
- Bouchair, A. & Dupagne, A. (2003). Building traditions of Mزاب facing the challenges of re-shaping of its built form and society. *Building and Environment*, 38, 1345–1364.
- Bruse, M., (2009). *ENVI-met*. <http://www.envi-met.com>.
- Damascus Municipality (1997). *Building regulations for the city of Damascus*. (Damascus: Damascus Municipality). (In Arabic).
- Eben Saleh, M.A. (2001). The evolution of planning and urban theory from the perspective of vernacular design: MOMRA initiatives in improving Saudi Arabian neighbourhoods. *Land Use Policy*, 18, 179–190.
- Eliasson, I. (2000). The use of climate knowledge in urban planning. *Landscape and Urban Planning*. 48, 31–44.
- Emmanuel, R., Rosenlund, H. & Johansson, E. (2007). Urban shading – a design option for the tropics? A study in Colombo, Sri Lanka. *International Journal of Climatology*, 27, 1995–2004.
- Givoni, B. (1998). *Climate considerations in buildings and urban design*. (New York: Van Nostrand Reinhold).

- Höppe, P. (1999). The physiological equivalent temperature – a universal index for the biometeorological assessment of the thermal environment. *Int. J. Biometeorology*, 43, 71–75.
- Johansson, E. (2006a). Influence of urban geometry on outdoor thermal comfort in a hot dry climate: A study in Fez, Morocco. *Building and Environment*, 41, 1326–1338.
- Johansson, E. (2006b) Urban design and outdoor thermal comfort in warm climates – studies in Fez and Colombo. Dissertation, Lund University.
- Johansson, E. & Emmanuel, R. (2006). The influence of urban design on outdoor thermal comfort in the hot, humid city of Colombo, Sri Lanka. *Int. J. Biometeorology*, 51, 119–133.
- Johansson, E. & Yahia, M.W. (2010, July). *Towards a Climate – Sensitive Urban Design: The Need to Modify Current Planning Regulations* (Paper presented at the 7<sup>th</sup> International Conference of the Centre for the Study of Architecture in Arab Region, Amman).
- Matzarakis, A. (2010). *RayMan*. <http://www.urbanclimate.net/rayman/>.
- Ochoa, J.M. & Serra, R. (2009). *Vegetation influences on the human thermal comfort in outdoor spaces*. Retrieved June 10, 2010, from School of Architecture of Barcelona, Dept. Construccions Arquitectòniques I & Dept. Física Aplicada, Web site: <http://www-fa.upc.es/personals/jroset/lyonvege.html>.
- Oke, T.R. (1987). *Boundary Layer Climates*. (London, New York: Routledge).
- Pearlmutter, D., Berliner, P. & Shaviv, E. (2006). Physical modelling of pedestrian energy exchange within the urban canopy. *Journal of Building and Environment*, 41, 783–795.
- Pearlmutter, D., Berliner, P. & Shaviv, E. (2007). Integrated modelling of pedestrian energy exchange and thermal comfort in urban street canyons. *Journal of Building and Environment*, 42, 2396–2409.
- Ping Lin, T. (2009). Thermal perception, adaption and attendance in a public square in hot and humid regions. *Journal of Building and Environment*, 44, 2017–2026.
- Plumley, H. J. (1975, August). *Design of outdoor urban spaces for thermal comfort*. (Paper presented at the conference on Metropolitan Physical Environment, Syracuse).
- Shashua-Bar, L., Erell, E. & Pearlmutter, D. (2009). The cooling efficiency of urban landscape strategies in a hot dry climate. *Landscape and Urban Planning* 92(3–4), 179–186.
- Shashua-Bar, L., Erell, E. & Pearlmutter, D. (2011). The influence of trees and grass on outdoor thermal comfort in a hot-arid environment. *International Journal of Climatology*, 31, 1498–1506.
- Thorsson, S. & Lindqvist, M. (2004). Thermal bioclimatic conditions and patterns of behaviour in an urban park in Göteborg, Sweden. *Int. J. Biometeorology*, 48, 149–156.
- Voogt, J.A. (2004). *Urban Heat Island: Hotter Cities*. Retrieved June 16, 2010, from <http://www.actionbioscience.org/environment/voogt.html>.
- Yahia, M.W. & Johansson, E. (2011, July). The influence of environment on people's thermal comfort in outdoor urban spaces in hot dry climates – The example of Damascus, Syria (Paper presented at 27<sup>th</sup> International conference on Passive and Low Energy Architecture, Louvain-la-Neuve).



# Paper 2

*Originally published in International Journal of  
Biometeorology*



# Evaluating the behaviour of different thermal indices by investigating various outdoor urban environments in the hot dry city of Damascus, Syria

Mooammed Wasim Yahia, Erik Johansson.  
Housing Development & Management, Lund University, Sweden.

## Abstract

In urban development, the consideration of urban microclimate and thermal comfort is absolutely needed, and a set of guidelines for every type of climate must be elaborated. However, to develop guidelines, the thermal comfort range needs to be defined. The aim of this study was to evaluate the behaviour of different thermal indices by investigating different thermal environments in Damascus during summer and winter. Another aim was to define the lower and upper limits of the thermal comfort range for some of these indices. The study was based on comprehensive micrometeorological measurements combined with questionnaires. It was found that the thermal conditions of different outdoor environments vary considerably. In general, Old Damascus, with its deep canyons, is more comfortable in summer than modern Damascus where there is a lack of shade. Conversely, residential areas and parks in modern Damascus are more comfortable in winter due to more solar access. The neutral temperatures of both the physiologically equivalent temperature (PET) and the outdoor standard effective temperature (OUT\_SET\*) were found to be lower in summer than in winter. At 80% acceptability, the study defined the lower comfort limit in winter to 21.0 °C and the upper limit in summer to 31.3 °C for PET. For OUT\_SET\*, the corresponding lower and upper limits were 27.6 °C and 31.3 °C respectively. OUT\_SET\* showed a better correlation with the thermal sensation votes than PET. The study also highlighted the influence of culture and traditions on people's clothing as well as the influence of air conditioning on physical adaptation.

**Keywords:** Damascus; Microclimate; Thermal comfort; Thermal indices; Thermal sensation; Urban design

## Introduction

Due to the complexity of urban microclimates and thus of determining thermal comfort in outdoor urban spaces, it is very necessary to deepen our knowledge about these issues. Such knowledge can help us to create useful and realistic guidelines for the urban planning and design processes. It is absolutely needed to improve the physical and climatic aspects of urban spaces, to make it possible to animate underused parts of a city, and to enhance the quality of life by achieving a level of harmony between the microclimate and urban spaces.

Many previous studies have focused on thermal comfort in outdoor urban spaces and behaviour in public spaces. Some studies examined behaviour, use of place and spatial variation (e.g. Nikolopoulou et al. 2001; Zacharias et al. 2001). Others have focused on thermal conditions and patterns of different behaviour in urban parks (e.g. Thorsson et al. 2004). Still others have focused on cultural and climatic characteristics which influence the usage of outdoor urban spaces (e.g. Knez and Thorsson 2006). While these studies have provided extremely useful insights for urban designers, to put these insights into practice, reliable and relevant methods are needed for gathering information about the urban microclimate and how it is affected by the existing urban design.

The outdoor thermal sensation range is wider than that indoors, spanning from thermal comfort to a stressful environment (Spagnolo and de Dear 2003; Emmanuel 2005). Moreover, outdoor conditions show large temporal and spatial variations, and the thermal balance of the body is seldom in steady state, as it is in controlled indoor environments. This situation is especially true for hot dry climates such as that in Damascus where the large temperature variation between summer and winter as well as night and day makes adaptation to the climate difficult.

Several studies related to microclimate and outdoor thermal comfort have been conducted in the hot dry climate, and most of these have provided new insights to improve the outdoor thermal environment. Quite a few studies have focused on microclimate and thermal comfort in street canyons based on simulations (e.g. Ali-Toudert and Mayer 2006; Fahmy et al. 2010), measurements (e.g. Ali-Toudert et al. 2005; Johansson 2006; Bourbia and Boucheriba 2010; Shashua-Bar et al. 2011) and a physical open air scale model (e.g. Pearlmutter et al. 2007). There are, on the other hand, very few studies on subjective thermal sensation in hot dry climates. Al Jawabra and Nikolopoulou (2009) studied the outdoor thermal comfort and the effect of socio-economic background and cultural differences in the hot dry climate of Marrakech in North Africa and Phoenix in North America. The authors aimed to develop better understanding of the complex relationship between microclimate and human behaviour in outdoor urban spaces in a hot arid climate. Micrometeorological measurements and questionnaire surveys were carried out in two sites in Marrakech and three in Phoenix. The authors argued that, particularly in the summer, the number of people and activities outdoors are influenced by the solar radiation. And people from different social backgrounds in hot arid climates have different approaches to the use of outdoor spaces. The study also concluded that the design is an important tool that can significantly improve microclimatic conditions in the specific climatic context. However, the study only calculated the Predicted Mean Vote (PMV) index and did not investigate the behaviour of other thermal indices. In addition, the study did not calculate

the thermal comfort limits and neutral temperatures. Mahmoud (2011) investigated the microclimate and thermal sensation in an urban park in Cairo, Egypt during the hot and the cold seasons. The study was based on field measurements and a questionnaire survey. By using the physiologically equivalent temperature (PET) index, the study showed an alteration in human comfort sensation between different landscape zones and it argued that most of the landscape zones in the study are thermally comfortable within a range of 22–30 °C PET in the hot month studied (June) and within 21–29 °C PET in the cold month studied (December). However, this study included only one thermal comfort index and did not include built-up areas. Moreover, the study was not conducted during the hottest and coldest months. In addition, the study did not reflect the people's thermal adaptation during the hot and cold seasons. There is thus a need for further studies in hot dry climates that take the extreme summer and winter seasons into account in different urban design patterns.

This study therefore focuses on the hottest summer and coldest winter conditions in the hot dry city of Damascus, Syria. The main aim of this study is to evaluate the behaviour of different thermal comfort indices by investigating different thermal environments and assessing people's thermal sensation in Damascus during the summer and winter seasons. This includes finding the lower and upper limits of the thermal comfort range as well as the neutral temperatures for some of these indices in the climate of Damascus. Such thermal comfort limits will help architects and urban designers to create design proposals according to the climatic needs. In addition, the novelty of this study is to examine the effect of air conditioning devices on people's outdoor thermal acceptability. This study also intends to investigate behavioural adaptation to the local climate conditions. The study is based on comprehensive micrometeorological measurements combined with a questionnaire survey during summer and winter. This study is one of few studies which deal with microclimate and subjective thermal comfort in the Middle East and the first of its kind in Damascus.

## The city of Damascus

Damascus city is located in the south-west of the Syrian Arab Republic in the Middle East (Elevation: 620 meters, Latitude: 33.5° N, Longitude: 36.5° E), see Fig. 1a. The city has two main parts:

- 1- The old part: It has a regular planning in general, with streets oriented N–S and E–W. Most streets are narrow in the form of deep canyons. The typical style of architecture in Old Damascus is simple from outside and rich with decoration and furnishings from inside, with inward orientation to the courtyards.

- 2- The modern part: The approach to urban design changed radically during the French colonial period (1920–45). New areas were built up with wide streets in a grid pattern and buildings were outwardly oriented (Al-Kodmany 1999). Damascus is surrounded by an oasis – the Ghouta region – watered by the Barada River that used to provide the city with drinking water.



## Materials and methods

A combination of measurements and structured interviews was used for assessing different thermal environments to simultaneously determine users' thermal sensation through investigating different thermal indices.

### Climate in Damascus

Climatic data for temperature and relative humidity in Damascus is shown in Fig. 2. Damascus has hot sunny summers and mild winters. Summer temperatures can exceed 35 °C during the day, but evenings are generally cool. Spring and autumn are most comfortable with average temperatures in the range of 16 to 20 °C. Winters are fairly cold and the temperatures can reach 0 °C at night.

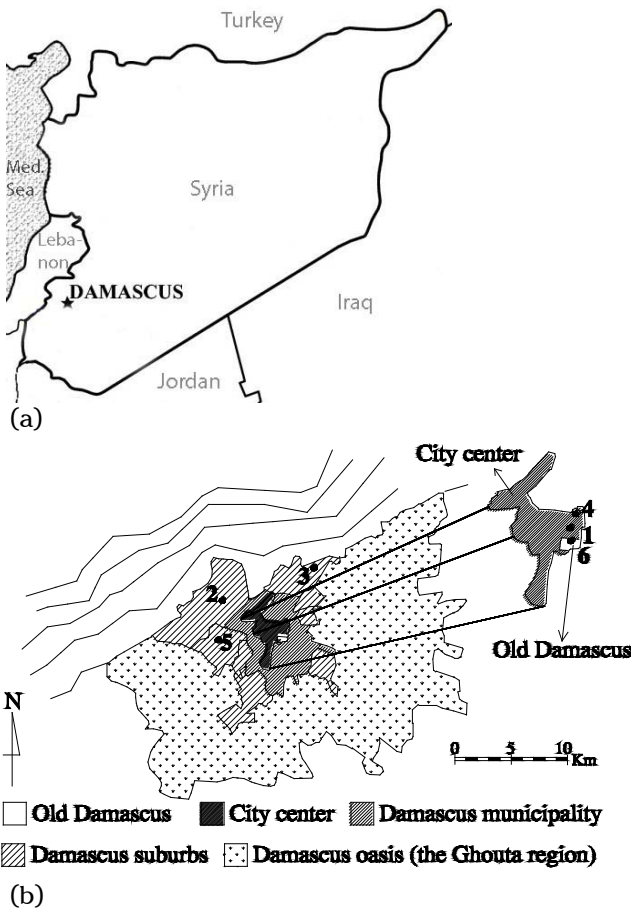


Fig. 1 **a** Location of Damascus in Syria, and **b** location of the measurement sites on a simplified map of the city of Damascus which is located between the Kassioun mountain chain in the northwest and an oasis in the south (see Fig. 3 for description of the sites)

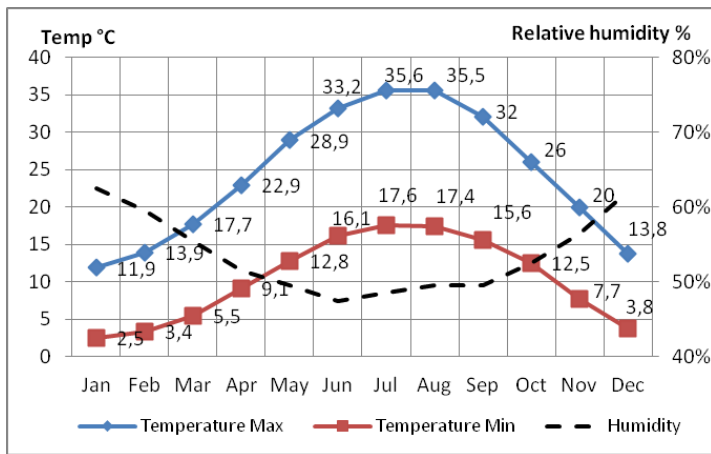


Fig. 2 Temperature and relative humidity in Damascus (average values for the period 1961–1990). Source: Damascus airport meteorological station

## Selection of measurement locations and time-periods

The locations selected were divided into three categories: two types of residential areas and parks. These three categories represent the most common environments in Damascus. The first category – residential areas in modern Damascus – contained three measurement locations: Al Gasany area (circle 1 in Fig. 1b), the New Dummar area (circle 2 in Fig. 1b) and the Barzza area (circle 3 in Fig. 1b). The second category – Old Damascus – contained a deep canyon: Al Qaymarieh Street (circle 6 in Fig. 1b). The third category – parks in modern Damascus – contained two locations: Al Tigara Park (circle 4 in Fig. 1b), and Al Mazza Park (circle 5 in Fig. 1b). The measurement sites are also shown in Fig. 3.

The investigation was carried out during the hottest and coldest seasons; during August and September 2009 for the summer, and during January and February 2010 for the winter. Northwest–southeast (NW–SE), northeast–southwest (NE–SW), and east–west (E–W) street orientations were included in the measurements as well as open spaces in parks. In all six locations, the fieldwork was scheduled mainly during the three hours starting from around noon since this time is the hottest time of the day. However, in order to extend the study of thermal comfort – to get a greater variety in microclimatic conditions – measurements were also carried out in the morning in the Barzza area and in the evening in old Damascus. See Table 1.



Fig. 3 a-f Measurement sites in the city of Damascus. **a** Al Tigara park, **b** Al Gassany area, **c** New Dummar area, **d** Barzza area, **e** Al Mazza park, **f** Old Damascus

Table 1 Orientation and land use of the measurement locations as well as date, and time of measurements

Category	Location's name	Orientation	Land use	Date of measurements	Time of measurements
Modern Damascus	Al Gassary	NW- SE	Residential road	13 August 2009	13:00 to 15:00
				10 January 2010	12:15 to 15:25
	New Dummar	-----	Residential space	15 August 2009	12:40 to 14:40
				24 January 2010	12:35 to 14:30
	Barzza	NE- SW	Residential and commercial space	18 August 2009	13:20 to 15:00
				26 September 2009	08:50 to 11:35
31 January 2010				11:55 to 14:35	
06 February 2010				08:00 to 11:11	
Old Damascus	Al Qaymarieh street	E-W	Residential, commercial and recreational road	19 August 2009	12:30 to 14:20
				30 September 2009	15:30 to 18:15
				06 February 2010	12:10 to 15:10
				05 February 2010	16:30 to 18:30
Public parks	Al Tigara Park	-----	Recreational space	12 August 2009	13:00 to 14:40
				17 January 2010	11:45 to 15:05
	Al Mazza Park	-----	Recreational space	17 August 2009	12:50 to 15:00
				05 February 2010	11:50 to 15:10

The official climatic data in Damascus during the measurement periods are shown in Table 2. It can be seen that the measurement days during summer were all similar to a normal day in August (see Fig. 2) whereas in winter, the weather varied considerably.

Table 2 Official climatic data for the period of the fieldwork in summer and winter seasons (air temperature, relative humidity, and wind speed).

Source: Damascus airport meteorological station

Date	Max. air temp. (°C)	Min. air temp. (°C)	Rel. humidity (Average) (%)	Wind speed (Average) (m/s)
12-Aug <sup>a</sup>	37.0	17.3	33	3.2
13-Aug <sup>a</sup>	37.4	18.0	33	4.1
15-Aug <sup>a</sup>	38.2	19.8	38	4.4
17-Aug <sup>a</sup>	39.4	20.0	31	5.4
18-Aug <sup>a</sup>	39.6	19.0	37	5.4
19-Aug <sup>a</sup>	37.8	20.0	40	5.1
10-Jan <sup>b</sup>	20.2	2.00	47	1.5
17-Jan <sup>b</sup>	19.7	7.00	54	4.0
24-Jan <sup>b</sup>	14.0	4.80	84	6.4
31-Jan <sup>b</sup>	19.5	5.60	67	4.0
05-Feb <sup>b</sup>	9.50	0.00	45	4.7
06-Feb <sup>b</sup>	9.80	-5.0	53	1.2

<sup>a</sup> Measurement days during the summer time (August 2009) for the six studied locations.

<sup>b</sup> Measurement days during the winter time (January and February 2010) for the six studied locations.

## Micrometeorological measurements

The measurement equipment was placed at the points where people could be expected to sit or walk. Air temperature ( $T_a$ ), globe temperature ( $T_g$ ), relative humidity (RH), wind speed (W) and wind direction (Wd) were measured. The measured microclimatic variables, measurement instruments, and their accuracy are presented in Table 3. The measurements in Al Gassany area, the Barzza area, and Al Mazza park were mainly conducted under the sunshine, whereas in Al Tigara park and Al Gassany area, the measurements were conducted partly in shade. Furthermore, the measurements in Old Damascus were completely in shade due to the high aspect ratio. Three areas - Al Gassany area, Old Damascus, and Al Mazza park - which represent the three studied categories of urban environments in Damascus were studied more in detail. Fig. 4 shows the urban characteristics of these three areas.

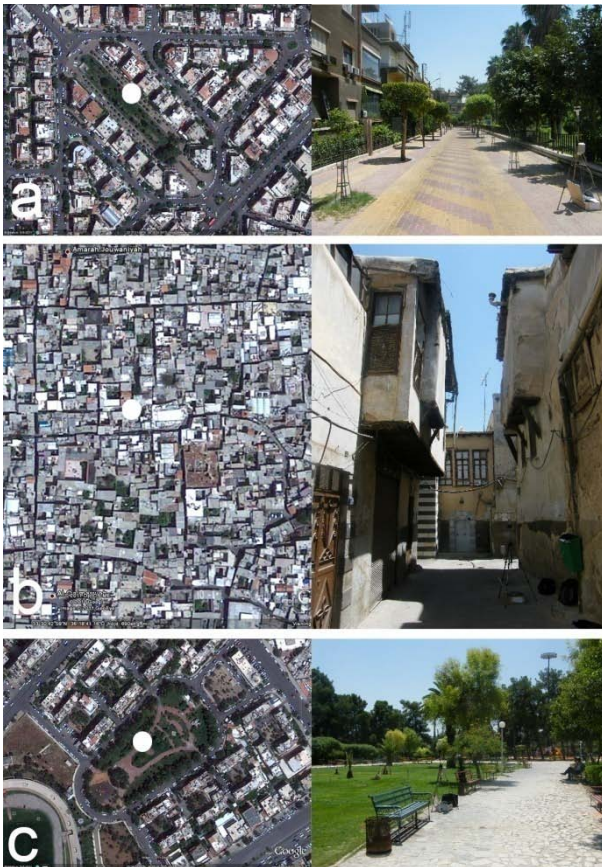


Fig. 4 Urban characteristics and measurement spots in (a) Al Gassany area, (b) Old Damascus and (c) Al Mazza park

Table 3 Measured variables, instruments, and accuracy of the instruments.  $T_a$  Air temperature,  $T_g$  globe temperature,  $RH$  relative humidity,  $W$  wind speed,  $W_d$  wind direction

Variable <sup>a</sup>	Instrument	Accuracy
$T_a$	Rotronic Hydroclip S3	$\pm 0.3^\circ\text{C}$
$T_g$	Pt100 in a grey plastic ball	$\pm 0.3^\circ\text{C}$ at $0^\circ\text{C}$
$RH$	Rotronic Hydroclip S3	$\pm 1.5\%$ RH
$W, W_d$	Gill WindSonic anemometer	$\pm 2\%$ @12m/s

<sup>a</sup>  $T_a$  = air temperature,  $T_g$  = globe temperature,  $RH$  = relative humidity,  $W$  = wind speed,  $W_d$  = wind direction.

For all measurements except wind, the height of the equipment was 1.1 m, which corresponds to the average height of the centre of gravity for adults (Mayer and Höppe 1987). The wind speed was measured at the height of 2 m, but it was later extrapolated down to 1.1 m using the following formula:

$$W_{1.1} = W_{2.0} \times (1.1/2.0)^{0.25} \quad (1)$$

Where  $W_{1.1}$  = wind speed at the height of 1.1 m, and  $W_{2.0}$  = wind speed at the height of 2 m.

The Mean Radiant Temperature (MRT) – which considers both short-wave and long-wave radiation and represents the weighted average temperature of an imaginary enclosure that gives the same radiation as the complex urban environment – has the strongest influence on thermo-physiological significant indices such as the Physiological Equivalent Temperature (PET) and the Predicted Mean Vote (PMV) (Matzarakis et al. 2007). In this study, MRT was derived from the globe temperature and the wind speed using the following formula (Thorsson et al. 2007):

$$MRT = [(T_g + 273.15)^4 + \frac{1.335 \times 10^8 W^{0.71}}{\varepsilon D^{0.4}} \times (T_g - T_a)]^{\frac{1}{4}} - 273.15 \quad (2)$$

Where  $T_g$  = the globe temperature ( $^\circ\text{C}$ ),  $W$  = the air velocity ( $\text{m s}^{-1}$ ),  $T_a$  = the air temperature ( $^\circ\text{C}$ ),  $D$  = the globe diameter = 40 mm,  $\varepsilon$  = the globe emissivity = 0.97.

The globe thermometer consisted of a flat grey painted table tennis ball. It should be noted that the MRT calculated in this way is very sensitive to variations in wind speed. E.g. an increase in the wind speed will mean that the globe cools down and  $T_g$  decreases, but as this cooling will not be instantaneous due to the thermal inertia of the globe, MRT will be overestimated. Similarly a sudden decrease in wind speed will lead to an underestimated MRT. To reduce the sensitivity to wind speed variations, 10 minute averages of wind speed were used in the calculations of the MRT.

## Calculation of outdoor thermal comfort indices

A great number of indices, which try to predict the state of thermal comfort, mainly for indoor applications but also for outdoors, have been developed.

The Predicted Mean Vote (PMV), the Standard Effective Temperature (SET\*) and the New Effective Temperature (ET\*) were all developed for indoors (McIntyre 1980). In addition, many indices have been primarily designed for outdoor applications, e.g., the Perceived Temperature (PT), which is based on the comfort equation of Fanger (Jendritzky et al. 2000), OUT\_SET\*, which is an adaptation of SET\* for outdoor use (Pickup and de Dear 2000), and the Physiological Equivalent Temperature (PET) (Höppe 1999). In this study, PET, OUT\_SET\*, ET\*, and PMV have been used to assess and evaluate the outdoor thermal environment in Damascus, whereas only PET and OUT\_SET\* were used for further analysis of thermal comfort limits. The RayMan PC application (Matzarakis et al. 2007) was used to calculate PET, whereas the ASHRAE Thermal Comfort Program (Fountain and Huizenga 1994) was used to calculate the OUT\_SET\*, ET\*, and PMV indices.

## Structured interviews

A questionnaire survey was performed at the same time as the measurements in each location in order to compare the actual thermal sensation with the calculated thermal indices derived from the micrometeorological measurements. A structured interview form was designed to assess the people's thermal sensation and other parameters such as gender and age, clothing, reason for being in the places, time spent outdoors, thermal preference, assessment of the microclimate, aesthetic qualities of the place, emotional state, and assessing the attitude to urban outdoor exposure. However, this paper discusses mainly the results about thermal comfort sensation, activity and clothing. The structured interview forms were not answered by people individually but by support from an assistant group belonging to Damascus University. Each interview took an average of 5 min to complete. A total of 920 people in both summer and winter were interviewed by a random selection. In each season, there were 60 interviews in each location plus 50 interviews in the Barzza area in the morning and in Old Damascus in the evening. The majority of the interviewees were between 20 and 65 years of age. Of the total sample 76% were male and 24% female. This percentage, which was similar in all areas in both seasons, reflects the fact that fewer women than men are present in public space for cultural reasons. The subjects were asked to report their thermal sensation according to a 9-point scale: very cold (-4), cold (-3), cool (-2), slightly cool (-1), comfortable (0), slightly warm (+1), warm (+2), hot (+3) and very hot (+4).

## Assessment of neutral temperatures and thermal comfort range

To determine the neutral temperature, which is defined as the temperature at which people feel thermally neutral (neither cool nor warm) and which corresponds to the value zero in the thermal sensation scale, probit technique (Ballantyne et al. 1977) was used. The neutral temperatures were determined by grouping all thermal sensation votes (TSV)  $< 0$  into a group of cooler than neutral, and all votes TSV  $> 0$  into a group of warmer than neutral. The votes TSV = 0 were randomly split between the groups TSV  $< 0$  and TSV  $> 0$ . The neutral temperature was then determined as the index temperature at which 50% of the sample voted cooler than neutral and 50% voted warmer than neutral. SPSS 18 (Statistical Package for the Social Sci-



ences Software for Windows) was used to perform the probit analysis. According to ASHRAE Standard 55 (2004) acceptable thermal conditions must be acceptable to 90% (high standard) or 80% (typical applications) of the users. This means that  $\leq 10\%$  or  $\leq 20\%$  of the users feel thermally unacceptable. Normally votes outside the three central categories of the TSV scale are considered to be unacceptable votes (e.g. Lin 2009). In this study, the comfort limits for both 10% and 20% unacceptability were calculated. It should be noted that in the winter there are few votes in the range of +3 to +4 and in the summer there are even fewer votes in the range -3 to -4. Thus, these votes were carefully checked and a few strange values were excluded from the comfort limits and neutral temperature calculations, i.e. those that voted -4 during the summer although they wanted it to be cooler, and those that voted +4 during the winter although they wanted it to be warmer.

## Results

### Microclimatic variations

Table 4 shows the variations of measured  $T_a$ , RH, W, and MRT in summer and winter for all locations. Table 4 illustrates the considerable differences between the seasons. However, the average values of wind speed were nearly the same (0.7 m/s in the summer and 0.8 m/s in the winter). The results also show the microclimatic differences between the old and the modern part of Damascus, especially in summer, due to completely different urban design features in terms of aspect ratios, building materials, and building geometries (Figs. 3 and 4). The reason why the average values of MRT in Al Gassany area and Al Tigara park in the summer were lower than the values in other locations in modern Damascus was due to the shade from trees that affected the measurements. For both seasons, it was noticed that high values of MRT are not necessarily correlated with high values of  $T_a$ .



Table 4 Average values of measured air temperature ( $T_a$ ), relative humidity (RH), wind speed ( $W$ ), and mean radiant temperature (MRT) in summer and winter in all locations. The measurements were taken on different days in the afternoon, unless otherwise stated.

Location	Avg $T_a$ (°C)		Avg RH (%)		Avg $W$ (m/s)		Avg MRT (°C)	
	Summer	Winter	Summer	Winter	Summer	Winter	Summer	Winter
Al Gassany area	34.0	19.5	20.2	30.5	0.7	0.6	59.4	34.2
Dummar area	36.3	9.7	18.9	74.2	0.7	0.8	69.8	11.7
Barzza area	36.9	9.8	18.1	73.3	0.9	0.8	71.4	13.4
Al Tigara park	30.8	15.4	31.6	46.7	0.9	0.8	58.3	28.5
Al Mazza park	37.0	6.7	18.1	42.4	1.0	1.4	70.6	36.2
Old Damascus	34.4	8.3	24.3	35.1	0.4	0.3	36.5	9.3
Barzza area (morning)	31.1	8.0	20.5	35.8	0.5	0.4	61.6	35.2
Old Damascus (evening)	26.9	5.6	23.2	40.7	0.4	0.8	27.4	5.4
All locations Avg	33.4	10.4	21.8	47.3	0.7	0.8	56.9	21.7

Fig. 5 shows the spatial variations of MRT for Al Gassany area, Old Damascus, and Al Mazza park as examples representing the outdoor urban environment in Damascus. It can be seen that for the summer MRT was higher in Al Mazza park than in Al Gassany area. The values in Old Damascus were considerably lower than in the two other places. The instability of MRT in Al Gassany area was due to the positioning of the measurements equipment, which was mounted beside a pedestrian path under a row of small trees where the globe thermometer during the measurement period was alternately in shade. In winter, there were major differences between the studied areas in terms of MRT. This is mainly because the weather was changing from one day to another during the measurement period (Table 2) and sometimes the change, of e.g clouds/solar exposure, even occurred during the measurements. As in summer MRT is however very stable in Old Damascus.

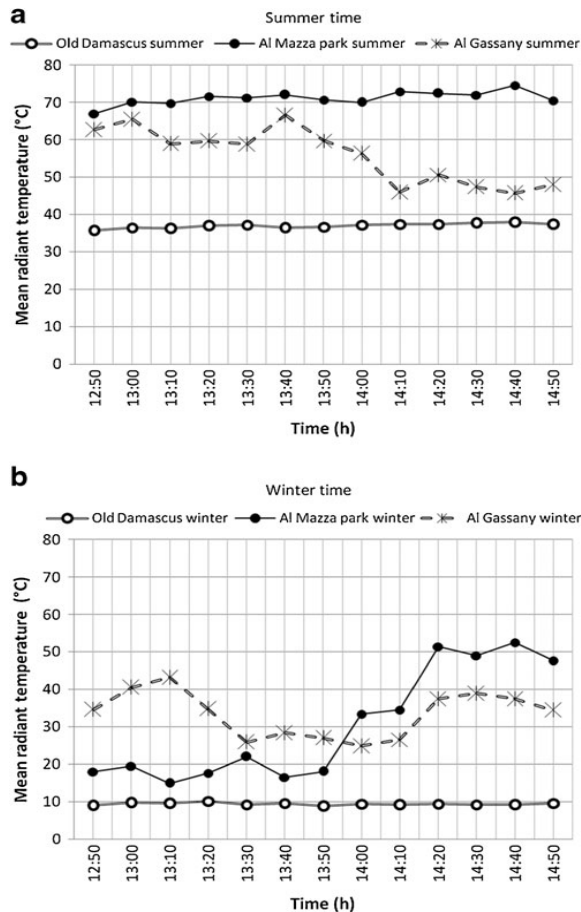


Fig. 5 Mean radiant temperature (MRT) variations in Al Gassany area, Old Damascus, and Al Mazza park during a summer and b winter

## Characteristics of different thermal indices

Table 5 shows the calculated PET, OUT\_SET\*, ET\*, and PMV for all studied locations. For all indices, the results reveal that in the summer Old Damascus is less stressful than the outdoor urban spaces in modern Damascus, whereas in winter, Old Damascus is colder than the other areas due to the lack of solar exposure as a result of the high building density. In summer, Al Gassany area and Al Tigara park, where there was some shade from trees, were less stressful than the other sites in modern Damascus where the measurement spot was exposed to sunshine all the time.

Table 5 shows that the average values of the PET index are higher in summer and lower in winter than the average values of both the OUT\_SET\* and ET\* indices. ET\*, in turn, has higher values in summer and lower in winter than OUT\_SET\*. One of the reasons why PET and ET\* have more extreme values is that they do not take clothing and activity into account as input variables. Another reason why OUT\_SET\* is slightly lower than ET\* in the summer may be because the effect of wind speed is included in the

calculation of  $OUT\_SET^*$  and not in  $ET^*$ . For the PMV index, the calculated values in winter are within the range from -3 (very cold) to +3 (very hot) except in Old Damascus in the evening. Only Al Gassany area was comfortable, i.e. within the comfort range of the index of -0.5 to +0.5 but this was mainly because the particular afternoon was exceptionally warm. In summer the values were in general well above the defined range of PMV and reached as high as 8 in the Barzza area. Only the values of Old Damascus, both during the day and in the evening, were within the defined scale of PMV.

Table 5 Average calculated values in summer and winter in all locations for the physiological equivalent temperature (PET), the outdoor standard effective temperature ( $OUT\_SET^*$ ), the new effective temperature ( $ET^*$ ), and the predicted mean vote (PMV). The values are from different days in the afternoon, unless otherwise stated.

	Avg PET °C		Avg $OUT\_SET^*$ °C		Avg $ET^*$ °C		Avg PMV	
	Summer	Winter	Summer	Winter	Summer	Winter	Summer	Winter
Al Gassany area	46.1	23.2	36.0	27.6	36.7	23.9	5.5	0.2
Dummar area	53.3	7.2	38.4	15.6	38.4	10.6	6.5	-2.8
Barzza area	54.0	7.8	38.2	15.8	39.3	11.2	8.0	-2.5
Al Tigara park	42.7	17.2	34.6	21.3	36.1	19.9	4.8	-1.6
Al Mazza park	53.2	11.1	37.9	19.4	39.1	15.2	7.7	-2.1
Old Damascus	35.3	6.7	32.3	14.4	31.9	8.6	2.9	-2.2
Barzza area (morning)	46.1	17.1	36.2	23.5	36.9	19.3	5.7	-1.1
Old Damascus (evening)	26.3	2.0	25.7	9.9	25.5	5.5	0.5	-3.9
All locations Avg	44.6	11.6	34.9	18.4	35.5	14.3	5.2	-2.0

## Subjective thermal sensation

Fig. 6 illustrates the clear differences between people's subjective thermal sensation in summer and winter for all studied locations together. The result shows that the people's thermal sensation in summer is between cool and very hot, whereas in winter it is between very cold and hot. The highest percentage of people feels comfortable in the winter time, whereas they feel hot in the summer time. The reason why the distribution of the comfort votes was widely spread in both summer and winter is due to the varying weather conditions between the measurement days (especially in winter) but also due to individual differences of people's thermal sensation. A similar difference in distribution between seasons was found in Sydney, Australia, by Spagnolo and de Dear (2003).

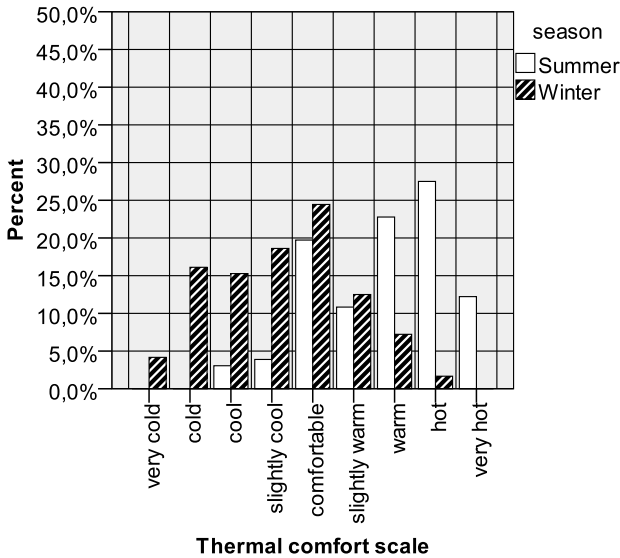


Fig. 6 Percentage frequencies for people's thermal sensation in the summer and winter seasons.

## Relationship between thermal sensation votes and thermal indices

When comparing the relationship between TSV and the calculated indices (PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$ ) it was found that the original thermal sensation scales of these indices often do not correspond to people's actual thermal sensation in Damascus. Fig. 7 shows the relationship between TSV and the index temperatures for PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  for each 1 °C index temperature. For both indices, the results show in general a wide spread of votes. This reflects the variations in people's thermal sensation which supposedly is due to differences in thermal history, emotional state, etc as well as individual thermal preferences. The variations are also caused by differences in activity and clothing. The regression lines for all the tested indices for both seasons are as follows:

PET

Summer

$$TSV = 0.060 \times PET - 0.941 \quad (R^2 = 0.42) \quad (3)$$

Winter

$$TSV = 0.114 \times PET - 2.755 \quad (R^2 = 0.60) \quad (4)$$

$OUT\_SET^*$

Summer

$$TSV = 0.134 \times OUT\_SET - 3.208 \quad (R^2 = 0.87) \quad (5)$$

Winter

$$TSV = 0.082 \times OUT\_SET - 2.928 \quad (R^2 = 0.66) \quad (6)$$

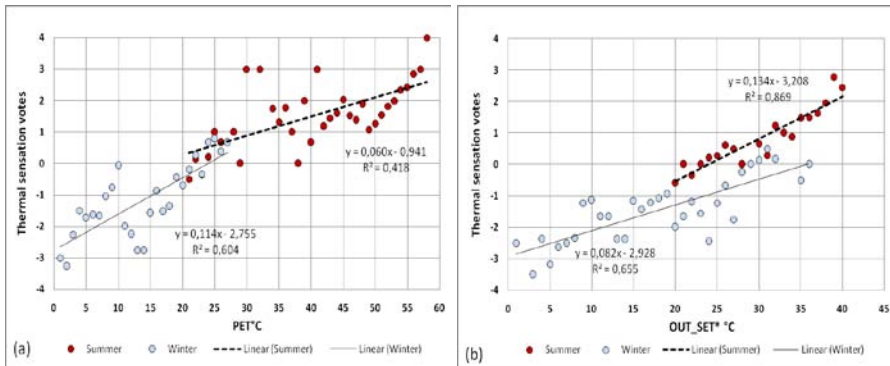


Fig. 7 Correlation between the mean thermal sensation votes (TSV) and **a** the PET index and **b** the  $OUT\_SET^*$  index in summer and winter

The slopes of the regression lines indicate the sensitivity to changes of the index values. In summer for PET, the slope is 0.060 corresponding to 16.6 °C PET per actual thermal sensation unit, whereas in winter, the slope is 0.114 corresponding to 8.8 °C PET per actual thermal sensation unit. This shows that people's thermal sensation is more sensitive to the variations of PET in winter than in summer. A similar tendency was found by Lin (2009) in Taiwan. In the case of the  $OUT\_SET^*$ , the slope for the summer is 0.134 which corresponds to 7.5 °C, whereas in winter, the slope is 0.082 and it corresponds to 12.2 °C per thermal sensation unit. This means that the people's thermal sensation is more sensitive to the variations of  $OUT\_SET^*$  in summer than in winter. A similar tendency was found by Lin et al. in Taiwan (2011).

The results show that the  $OUT\_SET^*$  index – especially in summer – has better correlation with TSV than the PET index ( $R^2$  for  $OUT\_SET^*$  is about 0.7 in winter and 0.9 in summer, whereas  $R^2$  for PET is about 0.6 in winter and 0.4 in summer). This is because PET does not take clothing and activity into account as input data (Höppe 1999).

## Thermal comfort limits and neutral temperatures

Fig. 8 shows the percentage of unacceptability in summer and winter for each 1 °C index temperature of the PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  indices. From the graphs in Fig. 8, the upper and lower limits of the comfort range for different percentages of unacceptability can be determined. However, to obtain a comfort range with both the lower and upper limit, measurements during all seasons including spring and/or autumn would have been required, especially in a hot dry climate where there is a considerable difference between summer and winter. Since in this study the field measurements were only conducted during the extreme weather conditions of summer and winter respectively – and mainly during three hours of the afternoon – it was not possible to define one comfort range for the whole year which is accepted by 80% or 90% of the people. Instead, summer and winter seasons were split up into two different groups and the upper and lower com-

fort limits for the summer and winter could be determined. These limits will be useful to architects and urban designers because they are valid for the most extreme weather conditions.

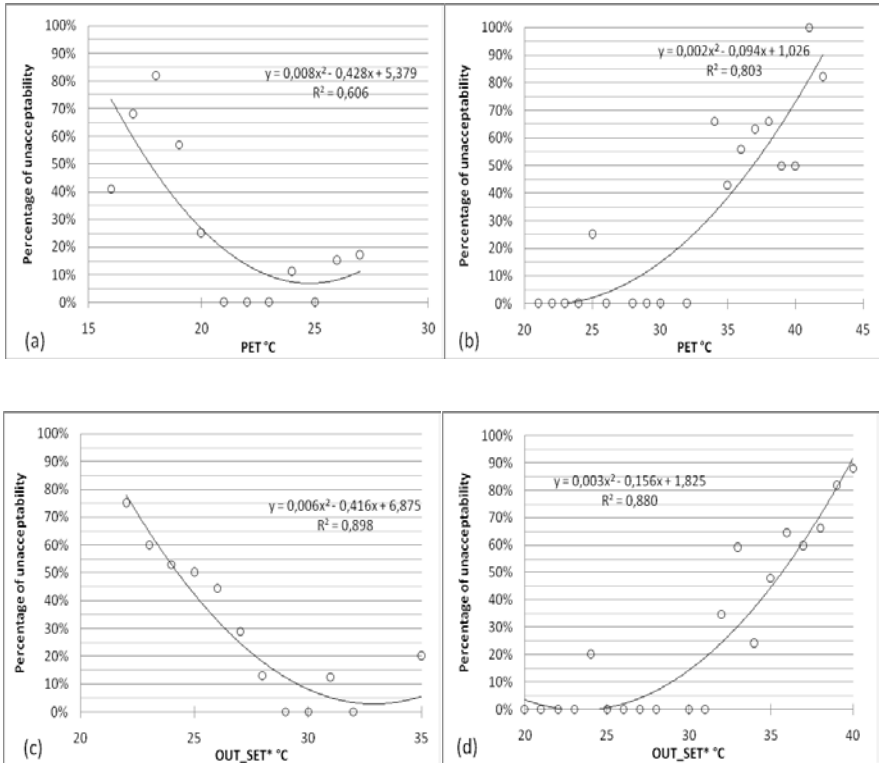


Fig. 8 Level of thermal unacceptability for a PET during winter, b PET during summer, c OUT\_SET\* during winter and d OUT\_SET\* during summer

The results illustrate that the OUT\_SET\* index has better correlation with people's thermal unacceptability than the PET index ( $R^2$  for OUT\_SET\* is about 0.9 for both winter and summer, whereas  $R^2$  for PET is about 0.6 in winter and 0.8 in summer). This can be explained by the influence of clothing and activity on people's thermal comfort.

Table 6 shows the upper and lower limits of thermal comfort range for 80% and 90% acceptability for PET and OUT\_SET\* during summer and winter in Damascus. 80% of acceptability will be applied in this study for further analysis since a wider comfort range is more appropriate outdoors due to the large climate variability (Spagnolo and de Dear 2003). Table 6 also illustrates that the neutral temperatures in summer for both PET and OUT\_SET\* are considerably lower than in winter.

Table 6 Neutral temperatures and upper limits in summer and lower limits in winter of the comfort range at 80 % and 90 % acceptability for PET and OUT\_SET\* in Damascus

Index	Neutral temperatures (°C)		Comfort range limits (°C)		
	Winter	Summer	Acceptability (%)	Lower limit Winter	Upper limit Summer
PET	23.4	15.8	90	22.8	28.5
			80	21.0	31.3
OUT_SET*	35.1	23.1	90	28.9	29.1
			80	27.6	31.3

## Behavioural adjustments – the role of clothing

Table 7 shows the reported average values of activity level and clothing insulation in all studied areas during summer and winter. In general, very small differences were found between areas and seasons in terms of people's physical activity and the reason is that during the fieldwork the people were mainly standing, walking slowly, or sitting. These actions represent the typical daily behaviour of the people in Damascus city in the outdoor urban environment both in summer and winter. On the other hand, the clothing values in summer time were significantly lower than the values in the winter due to the weather differences between these two seasons (see Table 7). The clothing levels were however similar within each season except during the measurements in Al Tigara Park on 17 January, which was a warm winter day (see Table 2); on this day the clothing value was clearly lower than the other winter values.

Table 7 Reported average values of activity and clothing in all studied areas during the measurement periods for the summer and winter seasons

Location name	Activity (average) met		Clothing (average) clo	
	summer	winter	summer	winter
Al Gassany area	1.6	1.6	0.56	0.96
Dummar area	1.7	1.5	0.57	1.00
Barzza area	1.4	1.6	0.56	0.99
Al Tigara Park	1.4	1.4	0.57	0.85
Al Mazza Park	1.4	1.6	0.58	1.02
Old Damascus	1.8	1.7	0.57	1.01
Barzza area (morning)	1.4	1.6	0.54	0.94
Old Damascus (evening)	1.6	1.5	0.59	1.00
All locations Avg	1.5	1.6	0.57	0.97

Fig. 9 shows the relationship between the average clothing value and the thermal comfort indices (PET and OUT\_SET\*) for each 1 °C index temperature. For both indices, the results show that when the index values increase, the clothing values decrease. This result is evidence of adaptation

to the weather and shows that climate conditions affect people's clothing. For these two indices, the results indicate that the distribution of clothing values is more widely spread in winter than summer. However, the variation of clothing values for PET – between 0.5 and 1.7 clo – is smaller than OUT\_SET\* – between 0.6 and 2.4 clo – and this is because OUT\_SET\* takes clothing into account as input data. Thus, OUT\_SET\* is more sensitive to the clothing than PET.

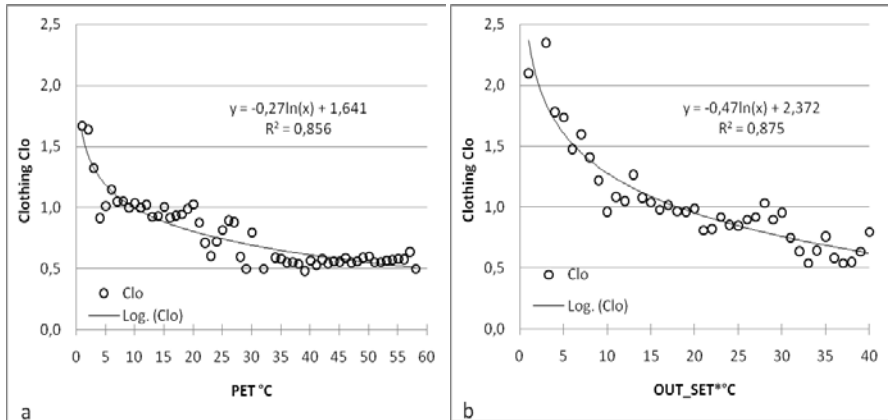


Fig. 9 Relationship between clothing and (a) the PET index and (b) the OUT\_SET\* index for summer and winter together

Fig. 10 shows the relationship between clothing and the thermal sensation votes in summer and winter as one sample. Regardless the thermal index, Fig. 10 shows that the distribution of clothing values – in relation to the thermal sensation votes – is between 0.4 and 2.5 clo. This range represents people's average clothing values during the summer and winter seasons. Fig. 10 also illustrates that when people vote within the cold side of the thermal comfort scale, they generally tend to wear heavy clothing, whereas when they vote within the warm side of the thermal comfort scale, they tend to wear light clothing. The result confirms the effect of thermal comfort on clothing.

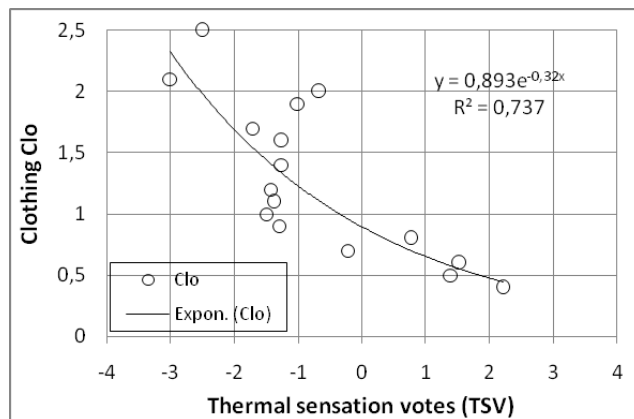


Fig. 10 Relationship between clothing and the thermal sensation votes in summer and winter



## Physiological adaptations – the effect of air conditioning

In hot dry Damascus, using indoor air conditioning devices in summer is very common so as to provide for better thermal conditions. In order to investigate the effect of air conditioning on people’s thermal sensation outdoors, a comparison between thermal comfort limits for people who have and those who do not have air conditioning devices – both at home and at work – has been conducted. Fig. 11 shows the relationship between the level of acceptability and the indices OUT\_SET\* and PET for each 1 °C index temperature. It is shown that at 80% of acceptability, the lower and upper limits of the comfort zone for people who do not have air conditioning devices (25.5 °C and 32 °C respectively) are wider than the limits for those who have air conditioning devices (29 °C and 30.5 °C respectively). In the summer, the results illustrate that the people who do not have air conditioning devices have more ability to accept higher temperatures than those who have air conditioning devices, whereas in winter, they are more able to accept lower temperatures than those who have air conditioning devices. This is evidence of physiological adaptation to the outdoor environment in Damascus city. The results agree well with the physiological adaptation found in naturally ventilated offices in Thailand when compared with offices with air conditioning (Busch 1992).

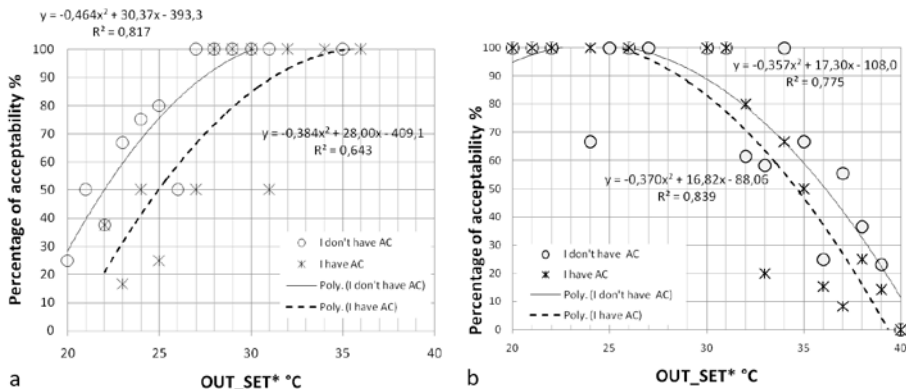


Fig. 11 Relationship between the level of acceptability and OUT\_SET\* for those who have and those who have not air conditioning for (a) winter and (b) summer

## Discussion

### Effect of urban geometry on microclimates

In summer, streets and parks in modern Damascus are more thermally stressful than the streets in Old Damascus. This reflects the strong influence of the urban geometry on the microclimate within built environments. Old Damascus has deep street canyons with high aspect ratios, which create a more comfortable microclimate since direct solar radiation and the mean radiant temperature decrease with the increase of the aspect ratio (Ali-Toudert and Mayer 2006). In contrast, the outdoor spaces in modern Da-

mascus have a low aspect ratio and consequently these spaces are more exposed to solar radiation, which has a negative impact on outdoor thermal comfort. Moreover, few places in the studied areas of modern Damascus have been designed to protect against solar radiation, especially in the Barzza and New Dummar areas. However, in the parks and in Al Gassany area less stressful environments can be found due to the existence of shading trees.

In winter, it was more difficult to compare the microclimatic qualities between the areas since the weather conditions varied from day to day during the field work. Old Damascus was the coldest area and that is because of the cold weather on the measurement day as well as the deep canyon, which prevents the direct solar radiation to reach the ground. In contrast, Al Gassany area was most comfortable, and that is because of the warm weather on the measurement day as well as the fact that the urban geometry in Al Gassany area allows the solar beam to reach the ground.

## Thermal comfort zones and neutral temperatures

In this study, all the studied indices had basically the same tendency in assessing the outdoor physical urban environment in the hot dry climate of Damascus. The study of Spagnolo and de Dear (2003) found that many of the thermal comfort indices they tested were statistically better to predict the outdoor thermal comfort in summer than in winter due to the skewed nature of the winter sample in their study. In this study no significant difference could be found between summer and winter predictions which may be because both the summer and winter samples were skewed and this may have affected the neutral temperatures. However, the results illustrate that the  $OUT\_SET^*$  index has better correlation with TSV and thermal unacceptability than the PET index and this may be due to the role of clothing and activity which are included in  $OUT\_SET^*$ .

In Table 8 the calculated thermal comfort ranges and neutral temperatures of PET from this study in Damascus are compared with other studies.

Table 8 Comparison of neutral temperatures and comfort ranges of the PET index in different climates.

Climate	Neutral temperature °C		Comfort range °C		Author
	Winter	Summer	Winter	Summer	
Western/ middle Europe	n/a	n/a	18–23 <sup>a</sup>		(Matzarakis and Mayer 1996)
Subtropical (Taiwan)	23.7 <sup>b</sup>	25.6 <sup>b</sup>	26–30 <sup>c</sup>		(Lin 2009; Lin and Matzarakis 2008)
Subtropical (Sydney)	28.8	22.9	n/a	n/a	(Spagnolo and de Dear 2003)
Hot arid, urban parks (Cairo)	26.5 <sup>d</sup>	27.4 <sup>d</sup>	22–30	21–29	(Mahmoud 2011)
Hot dry (Damascus)	23.4	15.8	21–n/a	n/a–31	This study

<sup>a</sup> Theoretical comfort scale for all seasons

<sup>b</sup> Neutral temperatures in Taiwan were calculated by Lin (2009). The summer, spring and fall in Taiwan are defined as the hot season whereas the winter is called cool season (Lin 2009).

<sup>c</sup> One comfort range for the hot and cool seasons together (Lin and Matzarakis 2008)

<sup>d</sup> Neutral temperatures were calculated as the average values of the neutral temperatures in nine measurement locations in an urban park in Cairo.

It may seem surprising that the neutral temperature for Damascus in the summer is lower than in the winter (Table 8) since one would expect the local population to be adapted to the weather conditions in each season. However, the results agree with those of Spagnolo and de Dear (2003). They explained the phenomenon by applying the concept of alliesthesia which is a psychological mechanism explaining the differences in sensation between seasons, i.e. if people feel warm then anything which makes them feel colder will be pleasant and vice versa. Conversely, the results disagree with the results for Taiwan (Lin 2009) and Cairo (Mahmoud 2011) where the authors found slightly higher neutral temperatures in summer than in winter (see Table 8).

This study has defined different thermal comfort limits for the summer and winter, whereas the other studies defined only one comfort range for the whole year. The reason to study the seasons separately is that people have adapted themselves differently to each season physiologically and psychologically (Mahmoud 2011). Thus, the lower limit for PET in winter (21 °C) is fairly close to the urban park in Cairo (22 °C), and the upper limit in summer (31 °C) is close to the one in the urban park of Cairo (29 °C). The explanation of this difference may be that the study of Cairo was only conducted in a park whereas this study was conducted in different urban environments. In addition, this study found that the parks in summer are less stressful than the built-up environments in the city (see Table 5).

In Table 9 the calculated thermal comfort ranges and neutral temperatures of  $OUT\_SET^*$  are compared with other studies. The winter neutral temperature in Damascus is higher than the summer one and the difference between the summer and winter neutral temperatures is 12 °C. This agrees well with the results in subtropical Sydney (Spagnolo and de Dear 2003) where the difference was also around 12 °C. Moreover, the summer neutral temperatures in Damascus (23.1 °C) and in Sydney (23.3 °C) were almost equal. However, Lin et al. (2011) found higher neutral  $OUT\_SET^*$  in the hot season (29.3 °C) than in the cool season (28 °C) and the difference between these two is only 1.3 °C.

Table 9 Comparison of neutral temperatures and comfort ranges of the *OUT\_SET\** index in different climates

Climate	Neutral temperature °C		Comfort range °C		Author
	Winter	Summer	Winter	Summer	
Subtropical (Taiwan)	28	29.3	n/a	n/a	(Lin et al. 2011)
Subtropical (Sydney)	33.3	23.3	n/a	n/a	(Spagnolo and de Dear 2003)
Hot dry (Damascus)	35.1	23.1	27.7–n/a	n/a–31	This study

## Clothing and cultural traditions

Many studies have investigated the relationship between clothing and thermal comfort. Andrade et al (2011) concluded in their study in Lisbon that the clothing values varied between 0.24 and 1.75 mainly as a result of seasonal and daily variations in air temperature and wind conditions. Similarly, the studies of Nikolopolou and Lykoudis (2006) in different countries in Europe and Lin (2009) in Taiwan found a strong relationship between average air temperatures and clothing. Lin (2009) also found a strong relationship between the PET and clothing values and concluded that changing clothing is one of the individual ways of thermal adaptation. As expected, this study found that the insulation value of people's clothing tend to decrease with increasing temperatures. The summer (hot season) values in this study are similar to those of Taiwan – around 0.6 clo (Table 7). The winter (cool season) values are however much higher in Damascus due to much colder winters. The study reveals that in the case of Damascus, the choice of clothing is to some extent also linked to cultural aspects; in the winter, high clothing values (about 2 clo) occur also at the sensation “slightly cool” (–1) (Fig. 10). These clothing values are represented by the values far above the regression curve. Thus in the winter, some people adjust their clothing according to the weather, whereas others use heavy clothing although it is slightly cold. Hence, the dress code of some of the people of Damascus seems to depend on cultural traditions rather than climate whereas most people choose their clothing according to the weather conditions when they feel thermally uncomfortable.

## Thermal comfort limits for urban design in Damascus

The results of this study give valuable information of which comfort limits urban designers in Damascus should aim at. The primary aim could be of course to identify the thermal comfort zone. However, due to the lack of data for spring and autumn in addition to the considerable difference between summer and winter, the lower and upper limits of the comfort zone for each of these seasons would be enough for architects and planners to apply. In addition, applying the lower and upper limits of the winter and summer comfort zones respectively in urban design will lead to more suitable proposals regarding microclimate because the comfort requirements

for the most extreme weather conditions will be achieved and these limits in turn will be valid for the entire year.

This study illustrates that the  $OUT\_SET^*$  index has better correlation with TSV and thermal unacceptability than the PET index and this is due to the role of clothing and activity that  $OUT\_SET^*$  takes into account as input data. Thus, the use of  $OUT\_SET^*$  is more suitable than PET. But on the other hand, the choice of thermal comfort index depends on the aim of the study. Among the tested indices,  $ET^*$  does not take variations in wind speed into account and is thus less suitable for this reason. If the aim of the study is only to assess and evaluate the physical environment independently from the people's sensations, e.g., if the aim is to compare the thermal comfort of different design proposals through simulations, the urban designer or researcher can use any of other indices tested in this study. If on the other hand, the aim is to assess the thermal environment taking into account people's thermal sensation, one can use an index that takes clothing and activity into account such as  $OUT\_SET^*$  or PMV. The use of these indices however requires knowledge – or at least an estimate – about people's clothing and activity. The fact that  $OUT\_SET^*$  is expressed in °C makes it easier to interpret than PMV. The PMV index is also restricted to moderate environments near neutrality (Spagnolo and de Dear 2003).

## Conclusions

This study assessed the microclimate of the outdoor urban environment and investigated the relationship between different thermal comfort indices and people's actual thermal sensation in the hot dry city of Damascus. Thermal conditions of different outdoor environments vary considerably, mainly as a function of solar access. It was concluded that the urban design in Damascus needs to include well shaded spaces for pedestrians – e.g. by using high building density or vegetation – to protect pedestrians in summer as well as open spaces to provide solar access in winter.

Furthermore, this study defined the upper summer and lower winter comfort limits for PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  in hot dry Damascus. This is important information for urban designers aiming for a climate-conscious urban design. The study also showed the influence of culture and traditions on clothing. While most people choose the clothing according to the climate, some people in Damascus are influenced by their cultural traditions when they choose clothes to wear.

This study highlighted the importance of a climate-conscious urban design and design flexibility. It is important to consider microclimate and thermal comfort in the urban design process and requirements for a climate-conscious urban design should preferably be included in the planning regulations for cities such as Damascus. In addition, existing urban environments in Damascus could be modified in order to provide a better outdoor thermal environment. Such studies could enhance the thermal comfort and suggest improvements of the existing urban planning regulations.

Further studies are needed since this and other studies have shown that the actual thermal sensation is not only affected by microclimatic parameters (air temperature, solar radiation, relative humidity, and wind speed) and personal parameters (people's activity and clothing). Future studies should look into other parameters such as the aesthetic qualities of the place, as well as psychological factors such as thermal history, emotional

state, and attitude towards urban outdoor exposure. Furthermore, measurements and thermal sensation questionnaires that cover all seasons are needed in order to define the annual comfort zone for Damascus.

## Acknowledgements

This research was funded by the Erasmus Mundus External Cooperation Window and Lund University, Sweden. The authors are most grateful to those students of the Architecture faculty at Damascus University who assisted in the questionnaire survey.

## References

- Ali-Toudert F, Mayer H (2006) Numerical study on the effects of aspect ratio and solar orientation on outdoor thermal comfort in hot and dry climate. *Build Environ* 41: 94–108.
- Ali-Toudert F, Djenane M, Bensalem R, Mayer H (2005) Outdoor thermal comfort in the old desert city of Beni-Isguen, Algeria. *Climate Research* 28: 243–256.
- Al Jawabra F, Nikolopoulou M (2009) Influence of hot arid climate on the use of outdoor urban spaces and thermal comfort: Do cultural and social backgrounds matter?. *Intelligent Buildings International*, 2 (3): 198–207.
- Al-Kodmany K (1999) Privacy: Traditional and Modern Architecture and Urban Design. *Urban Design* 4: 283–312.
- Andrade H, Alcoforado M J, Oliveira S (2011) Perception of temperature and wind by users of public outdoor spaces: relationships with weather parameters and personal characteristics. *Int J Biometeorol* 55: 665–680.
- ASHRAE Standard 55 (2004). Thermal environmental conditions for human occupancy. American Society of Heating, Refrigerating and Air-Conditioning Engineers, Inc., Atlanta.
- Ballantyne E R, Hill R K, Spencer J W (1977) Probit Analysis of Thermal Sensation Assessments. *Int J Biometeorol* 21: 29–43.
- Bourbia F, Boucheriba F (2010) Impact of street design on urban microclimate for semi arid climate (Constantine). *Renewable Energy* 35: 343–347.
- Busch J F (1992) A tale of two populations: thermal comfort in air-conditioned and naturally ventilated offices in Thailand. *Energy and Buildings* 18:235–249.
- Emmanuel R (2005) An urban approach to climate-sensitive design: strategies for the tropics. Spon Press, London.
- Fahmy H, Sharples S, Yahia M (2010) LAI based trees selection for mid latitude urban developments: a microclimatic study in Cairo, Egypt. *Build Environ* 45: 345–357
- Fountain M E, Huizenga C (1994) Using the ASHRAE thermal comfort tool. An ASHRAE Special Publication, ASHRAE, Atlanta.
- Höppe P (1999) The Physiological Equivalent Temperature – a universal index for the assessment of the thermal environment. *Int J Biometeorol* 43: 71–75.
- Jendritzky G, Staiger H, Bucher K, Graetz A, Laschewski G. (2000) The perceived temperature: The method of the Deutscher Wetterdienst for the Assessment of Cold Stress and Heat load for the Human Body, Presented at Internet Workshop on Windchill.

- Johansson E (2006) Influence of urban geometry on outdoor thermal comfort in a hot dry climate: A study in Fez, Morocco. *Build Environ* 41: 1326–1338.
- Knez I, Thorsson S (2006) Influences of culture and environmental attitude on thermal, emotional and perceptualevaluations of a public square. *Int J Biometeorol* 50: 258–268.
- Lin TP, de Dear R, Hwang R L (2011) Effect of thermal adaptation on seasonal outdoor thermal comfort. *Int. J. Climatol* 31: 302–312.
- Lin TP (2009) Thermal perception, adaption and attendance in a public square in hot and humid regions. *Build Environ* 44: 2017–2026.
- Lin TP, Matzarakis A (2008) Tourism climate and thermal comfort in Sun Moon Lake, Taiwan. *Int J Biometeorol* 52(4): 281–290.
- Mahmoud A H A (2011) Analysis of the microclimatic and human comfort conditions in an urban park in hot and arid regions. *Build Environ* 46: 2641–2656.
- Matzarakis A, Rutz F, Mayer H (2007) Modelling radiation fluxes in simple and complex environments – application of the RayMan model. *Int J Biometeorol* 51: 323–334.
- Matzarakis A, Mayer H (1996) Another Kind of Environmental Stress: Thermal Stress. WHO Colloborating Centre for Air Quality Management and Air Pollution Control. *NEWSLETTERS*18: 7–10.
- Mayer H, Höppe P (1987) Thermal comfort of man in different urban environments. *Theoretical and Applied Climatology* 38: 43–49.
- McIntyre D A (1980) *Indoor Climate*. Applied Science Publishers, London.
- Nikolopoulou M, Lykoudis S (2006) Thermal comfort in outdoor urban spaces: analysis across different European countries. *Build Environ* 43: 1185–1196.
- Nikolopoulou M, Baker N, Steemers K (2001) Thermal comfort in outdoor urban spaces: understanding the human parameter. *Solar Energy* 70: 227–35.
- Pearlmutter D, Berliner P, Shaviv E (2007) Integrated modelling of pedestrian energy exchange and thermal comfort in urban street canyons. *Build Environ* 42: 2396–2409.
- Pickup J, de Dear R (2000) An outdoor thermal comfort index (OUT\_SET\*) - Part I- The model and its assumptions. In: de Dear R et al (ed) *Biometeorology and Urban Climatology at the Turn of the Millennium*. World Meteorological Organization, Sydney, pp 279–283.
- Shashua-Bar L, Erell E, Pearlmutter D (2011) The influence of trees and grass on outdoor thermal comfort in a hot-arid environment. *International Journal of Climatology* 31: 1498–1506.
- Spagnolo J, de Dear R (2003) A field study of the thermal comfort in outdoor and semi-outdoor environments in subtropical Sydney Australia. *Build Environ* 38: 721–738.
- Thorsson S, Lindberg F, Eliasson I, Holmer B (2007) Different methods for estimating the mean radiant temperature in an outdoor urban setting. *Int. J. Climatol* 27: 1983–1993.
- Thorsson S, Lindqvist M, Lindqvist S (2004) Thermal bioclimatic conditions and patterns of behavior in an urban park in Göteborg, Sweden. *Int J Biometeorol* 48: 149–156.
- Zacharias J, Stathopoulos T, Hanqing W (2001) Microclimate and downtown open space activity. *Environment and Behavior* 33: 296–315.

# Paper 3

*Originally presented at the 8<sup>th</sup> International Conference on Urban Climate (ICUC8), 6th-10th August, 2012, Dublin, Ireland*





# Urban microclimate and thermal comfort in outdoor spaces in hot dry Damascus

Mooammed Wasim Yahia, Erik Johansson.  
Housing Development & Management, Lund University, Sweden.

## Abstract

Due to the complexity of urban microclimate and thermal comfort related to outdoor urban spaces, it is very necessary to deepen our knowledge of these issues in order to enhance better guidelines for the urban planning and urban design processes, especially when the relationship between urban design and urban microclimate is not known. The aim of this study is to investigate different thermal environments in the city of Damascus, Syria during summer and winter time concerning outdoor thermal comfort. This study is based on microclimatic field measurements and structured interviews in six different locations including residential areas and parks in modern Damascus as well as a residential street in Old Damascus. The results show that microclimatic conditions vary considerably between the different sites. It is illustrated that outdoor spaces in Old Damascus are more comfortable than outdoor spaces in modern Damascus. It is also shown that parks are more comfortable than residential areas in modern Damascus. The study highlights the effect of urban design on microclimate and demonstrates the need to create better urban spaces in harmony with microclimate.

**Keywords:** Damascus; Hot dry; Microclimate; Thermal comfort; Urban spaces

## 1. Introduction

The quality of outdoor urban spaces has received a great deal of attention in recent years. In addition, there is a broad recognition that microclimatic conditions contribute to the quality of life in cities, both from the economic and social viewpoint. Thus, the quality of outdoor urban spaces has a great importance in urban planning and design as well as in planning social, environmental, and cultural functions. On the other hand, the combination of urban microclimates and thermal comfort in the outdoor built environment can be useful to improve the physical and climatic aspects of urban spaces, to make it possible to animate underused parts in the city, and to enhance the quality of life by reaching a level of harmony between the outdoor environment, microclimates and thermal comfort. This is a very important topic especially in hot dry regions where the large temperature variation between summer and winter as well as between night and day makes the adapta-

tion to the climate difficult. In addition, human performance of both mental and physical tasks diminishes at uncomfortably high temperatures.

Previous studies in hot and dry climates have highlighted the importance of microclimate and thermal comfort in urban design. A few studies have conducted simulations focusing either on microclimate and thermal comfort in street canyons, e.g. [1] or on the influence of urban planning regulations in hot and dry climates, e.g. [2]. Some others have conducted measurements, e.g. [3]. Others have focused on subjective thermal sensation in urban parks, e.g. [4]. Although these and other studies have provided useful insights in the field of microclimate and thermal comfort, there is still a need to investigate all types of thermal environments in hot dry regions so as to develop useful guidelines for architects and urban designers. The aim of this study is to investigate different thermal environments in the city of Damascus, Syria through microclimatic measurements and structured interviews on outdoor thermal comfort during summer and winter.

## 2. Materials and methods

### 2.1 The city of Damascus and its climate

Damascus city (Elevation: 620 meters, Latitude: 33.5° N, Longitude: 36.5° E) is located in the south-west of the Syrian Arab Republic in the Middle East and It has two main parts:

1. The old part: It has a regular planning in general, with N-S and E-W street orientations. Most streets are narrow in the form of deep canyons and the buildings have an inward orientation to the courtyards.

2. The modern part: The approach to urban design changed radically during the French colonial period (1920–45). New areas were built up with wide streets in a grid pattern and buildings were outwardly oriented. Damascus is surrounded by an oasis – the Ghouta region – watered by the Barada River that used to provide the city with drinking water.

Damascus has sunny summers (June to August) and fairly cold winters (December to February). Summer temperatures can reach in excess of 35°C during the day, but evenings are generally cool. In winter, minimum temperatures can reach 0°C. Snowfall is common in winter on the mountains surrounding the city. Spring and autumn have the most comfortable climate with average temperatures in the range of 16 to 20°C

### 2.2 Measurements and structured interviews

Both field measurements and a questionnaire survey were conducted during the summer of 2009 and the winter of 2010 in Damascus and six locations were selected for the fieldwork and these locations were divided into three categories. The first category – residential areas in modern Damascus – contained three measurement locations: Al Gassany area (picture b in Fig.1), the New Dummar area (picture c) and the Barzza area (picture d). The second category – Old Damascus – contained a deep canyon: Al Qaymarieh Street (picture f). The third category – parks in modern Damascus – contained two locations: Al Tigara Park (picture a), and Al Mazza Park, (picture e). In these six locations, the measurement fieldwork was scheduled mainly during the three hours starting from around noon, since this time is

the hottest time of the day. At all locations, air temperature ( $T_a$ ), globe temperature ( $T_g$ ), relative humidity (RH), wind speed (W) and wind direction ( $W_d$ ) were measured. However, the measurements took place at different days at each location. The Physiological Equivalent Temperature (PET) [5] was chosen as the primary thermal index in this study and the RayMan PC application [6] was used to calculate PET.



Fig 1. Measurement sites in the city of Damascus, where (a) is Al Tigara park, (b) is Al Gassany area, (c) is New Dummar area, (d) is Barzza area, (e) is Al Mazza park, and (f) is Old Damascus[7].

The characteristics of the thermal environment in all studied locations will be discussed. However, the three areas – Barzza area, Old Damascus, and Al Mazza park – which represent the three studied categories of urban environments in Damascus were studied more in detail.

The Mean Radiant Temperature (MRT) was derived from the globe temperature and the wind speed and was calculated using the following formula [8]:

$$MRT = [(T_g + 273.15)^4 + \frac{1.335 \times 10^8 V_a^{0.71}}{\varepsilon D^{0.4}} \times (T_g - T_a)]^{\frac{1}{4}} - 273.15$$

Where  $T_g$  = the globe temperature ( $^{\circ}\text{C}$ ),  $V_a$  = the air velocity ( $\text{ms}^{-1}$ ),  $T_a$  = the air temperature ( $^{\circ}\text{C}$ ),  $D$  = the globe diameter = 40 mm,  $\varepsilon$  = the globe emissivity = 0.97.

A structured interview survey was performed simultaneously with the measurements in each location (approximately, 60 interviews were conducted in each area). The structured interviews were designed to assess the people's thermal perception and other parameters such as climatic and aesthetic preferences and emotional state on people in Damascus. However in this study, the question of thermal perception was only studied. The

subjects were asked to report their thermal perception according to a 9-point scale: very cold, cold, cool, slightly cool, comfortable, slightly warm, warm, hot, and very hot.

### 3. Results and discussion

#### 3.1 Microclimate and spatial variations

By comparing the official air temperatures – derived from Damascus airport meteorological station – to the measured air temperatures at the six locations, it was clear that there was no decisive difference between the official and measured temperatures. Fig. 2 shows the seasonal measurements in Al Gassany area, Old Damascus and Al Mazza park. The results show that there are considerable differences between the summer and winter in terms of  $T_a$ , MRT, and PET due to seasonal weather differences. Moreover, the results indicate that in both summer and winter there are significant differences between the areas in terms of thermal comfort and microclimate.

Fig. 2 shows that in the summer,  $T_a$  and MRT and PET were nearly stable during the measurements at all three locations. The air temperature was similar and the sky was clear on all measurement days and therefore it is possible to compare the microclimatic differences between the sites. Regarding the PET index, the results illustrate that in the Barzza area PET was nearly constant with an average value of  $55^\circ\text{C}$  (Fig. 2a), whereas in Old Damascus the average value was  $36^\circ\text{C}$  (Fig. 2c), and in Al Mazza park, the average value was  $53^\circ\text{C}$  (Fig. 2e). Thus, in summer, residential areas are only slightly more thermally stressful than parks in modern Damascus, whereas both the residential areas and the parks are much more stressful than the outdoor spaces in Old Damascus. The findings thus reflect the strong influence of the urban geometry on the microclimate within built environments. Old Damascus has deep street canyons with a high aspect ratio, which creates a more favorable microclimate. This microclimate in turn has a positive effect on thermal comfort, since direct solar radiation and the mean radiant temperature decrease with the increase of the aspect ratio. In contrast, the outdoor spaces in modern Damascus have a low aspect ratio and as a result, these spaces are more exposed to solar radiation, which has a negative impact on outdoor thermal comfort. This result agrees well with other studies in similar climates [1].

In winter it is difficult to compare the areas since the weather conditions varied significantly between the measurement days and sometimes even during the measurement period (Fig. 2f). The measurements in Old Damascus however show that there is virtually no difference between MRT, PET and the air temperature due to the high aspect ratio. Conversely, in modern Damascus MRT is considerably higher than the air temperature which helps increasing PET.

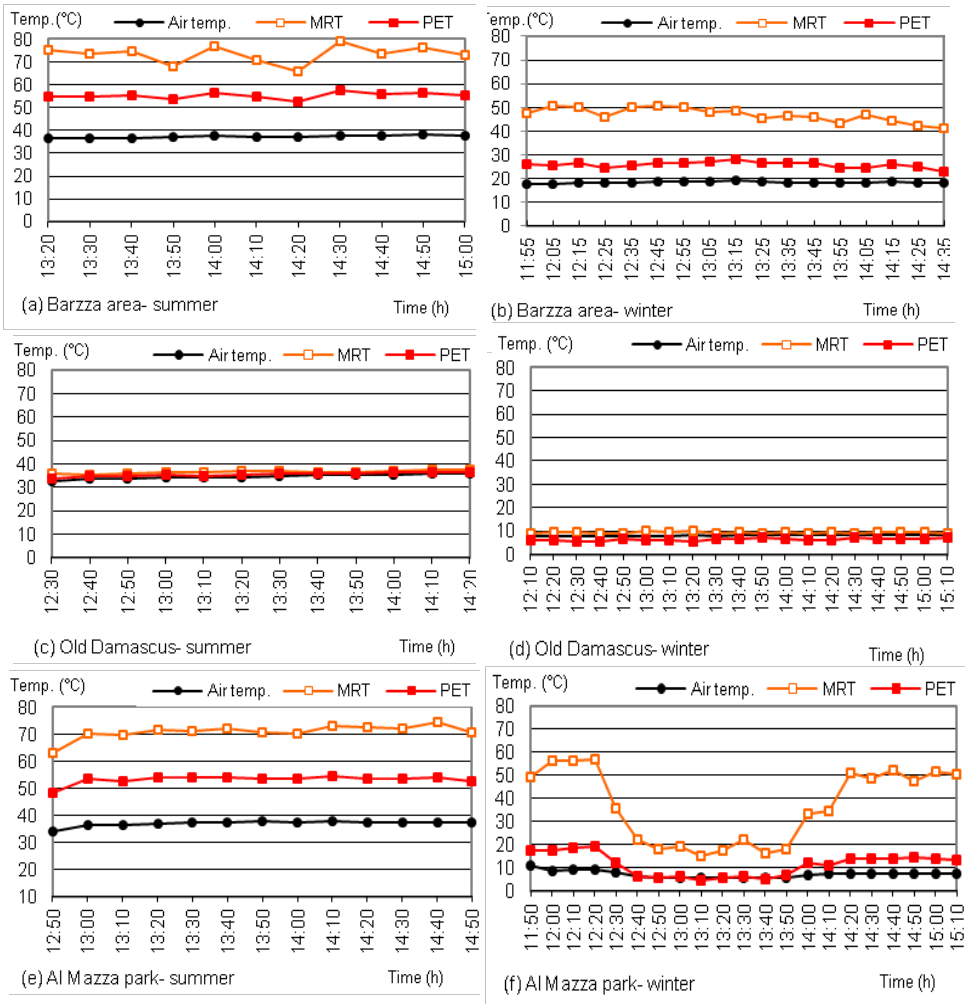


Fig 2. The results of measurements during summer and winter in the Barzza area, Old Damascus and Al Mazza park.

### 3.2 Thermal sensation

The majority of the interviewees were between 20 and 65 years of age, of which 78% were male and 22% female. This percentage reflects the social life and the gender division during the fieldwork.

Fig. 3 shows the percentage distribution of thermal sensation for the interviewees in the summer and winter in the Barzza area, Old Damascus and Al Mazza park. In summer, the results in Barzza area show that the highest percentages of people (40%) feel hot, and in Old Damascus, the highest percentage (32%) feels comfortable, whereas in Al Mazza park, the highest percentage (25%) feels warm. Although both PET and MRT are similar in Barzza area and Al Mazza park, the people perceive Al Mazza park less stressful, whereas Old Damascus is clearly the least stressful.

In winter, the results in Barzza area show that the highest percentage (45%) feels comfortable, and in Old Damascus, the highest percentage (32%) feels cold, whereas, in Al Mazza park, the highest percentage (48%) feels cold. It should be noted that it is difficult to compare the sites in winter since the weather conditions in the fieldwork days were so different. In the case of Old Damascus and in addition to the difference in weather in the fieldwork days, Old Damascus is colder than modern Damascus. This is partly explained by the fact that the deep canyons in Old Damascus prevent the solar radiation to reach the ground since the sun angle during the winter is lower than in the summer.

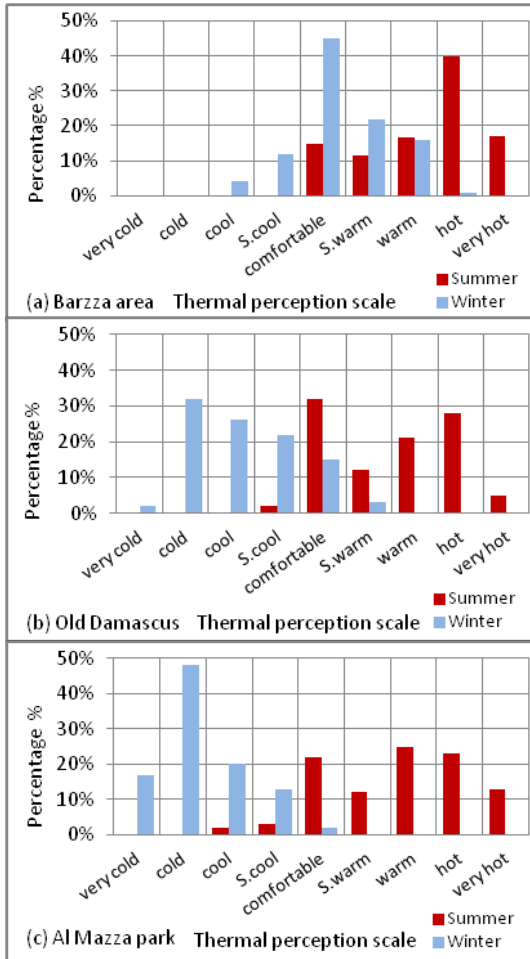


Fig 3. The percentage distribution people’s thermal sensation during summer and winter in (a) Barzza area, (b) Old Damascus and (c) Al Mazza park.

In the three studied areas, the tendency – as regards the thermal sensation – is similar between the areas. The results indicate that in summer, people in outdoor spaces in modern Damascus feel more stressed by the environment than people in the parks in modern Damascus. In addition,

people in the parks in modern Damascus feel more stressed than people in Old Damascus. This result agrees well with another study although in a different climate [9].

## 4. Conclusion

The study shows that microclimatic conditions vary considerably between the different sites. Especially during summer this is due to the impact of urban design on the microclimate. It is illustrated that outdoor spaces in Old Damascus are more comfortable than outdoor spaces in modern Damascus during the summer which is the most problematic season. It is also shown that parks are perceived as more comfortable than residential areas in modern Damascus. In winter, however, the microclimatic differences between the locations were mainly due to the variation of the weather conditions between the measurement days. The solar access is however much lower in Old Damascus due to the high aspect ratio.

This study highlights the importance of a climate conscious urban design and design flexibility. Urban environments can be modified in summer and winter in order to provide a better outdoor thermal environment for people. In addition, the study also shows the importance of the harmony between microclimate and urban design. Such harmony can be achieved by including requirements for a climate-conscious urban design in the planning regulations for cities such as Damascus.

## 5. Acknowledgements

This study was financially supported by Erasmus Mundus External Cooperation Window Lot 3 and Lund University, Sweden.

## 6. References

1. Ali-Toudert, F. and H. Mayer, (2006). Numerical study on the effects of aspect ratio and solar orientation on outdoor thermal comfort in hot and dry climate. *Building and Environment*, 41: p. 94-108.
2. Yahia, M. W. and E. Johansson, (2012). Influence of urban planning regulations on the microclimate in a hot dry climate: The example of Damascus, Syria. *J Hous and the Built Environ*, DOI 10.1007/s10901-012-9280-y.
3. Johansson, E., (2006). Influence of urban geometry on outdoor thermal comfort in a hot dry climate: A study in Fez, Morocco. *Building and Environment*, 41: p. 1326-1338.
4. Mahmoud, A.H.A., (2011). Analysis of the microclimatic and human comfort conditions in an urban park in hot and arid regions. *Building and Environment*, 46: p. 2641-2656.
5. Höppe, P., (1999). The Physiological Equivalent Temperature- a universal index for the assessment of the thermal environment. *Int J Biometeorol*, 43: p. 71-75.
6. Matzarakis, A., F. Rutz. and H. Mayer, (2007). Modelling radiation fluxes in simple and complex environments – application of the RayMan model. *Int J Biometeorol*, 51: p. 323-334.



7. Yahia, M. W., (2012). Microclimate and thermal comfort of urban spaces in hot dry Damascus: Influence of urban design and planning regulations. Teknologie licenciat. Lund University.
8. Thorsson, S., F. Lindberg, I. Eliasson and B. Holmer, (2007). Different methods for estimating the mean radiant temperature in an outdoor urban setting. *Int J Biometeorol*, 27: p. 1983-93.
9. Thorsson, S., T. Honjo, F. Lindberg, I. Eliasson and E.M. Lim, (2007). Thermal comfort and outdoor activity in Japanese urban public places. *Environment and Behavior*, 39: p. 66.0-684.

# Paper 4

*Originally presented at the 27<sup>th</sup> International conference on Passive and Low Energy Architecture (PLEA), 13<sup>th</sup> -15<sup>th</sup> July, 2011, Louvain-la-Neuve, Belgium*



# The Influence of Environment on People's Thermal Comfort in Outdoor Urban Spaces in Hot Dry Climates – The example of Damascus, Syria

Moohammed Wasim Yahia, Erik Johansson.  
Housing Development & Management, Lund University, Sweden.

## Abstract

It is well known that the quality of outdoor urban spaces becomes one of the important items in the urban design process not only for ecological and economical purposes, but also it is important from the social point of view. This study is part of a project in the city of Damascus, Syria which aims to point out the impact of current urban design on microclimate and outdoor thermal comfort in a hot dry climate during summer and winter. The aim of this study is to examine the influence of urban spaces on people's thermal perception. The aim is also to examine how people experience the aesthetic quality of the urban design in the studied areas (beautiffulness, pleasantness). The study also examines the influence of the use of air conditioning devices on people's thermal perception. This study is based on over 720 structured interviews during summer and winter. Results show clear differences between people's thermal perception in both summer and winter seasons. Moreover, people's perception of pleasantness and beautiffulness is influenced by the weather and climate. On the other hand, no significant impact could be found for the influence of air conditioning devices on people's outdoor thermal perception.

**Keywords:** Hot dry climate; Outdoor thermal comfort; Outdoor urban spaces; Thermal perception.

## 1. Introduction

In urban settlements, the concentration of people and their activities create intensified demands on the environment. However, this concentration offers opportunities, through microclimatic adaptation, design and actions at an urban scale to minimize the impact on the ecosystem of the region without causing damage. It can then be said that a level of sustainable exis-

tence has been reached at which the community can live in symbiotic harmony between design, microclimate, and its environment. On the other hand, it is well known that the quality of outdoor urban spaces becomes one of the important items in the urban design process not only for ecological and economical purposes, but also it is important from the social point of view.

Efforts by public agencies and private interest groups to revitalize the central business districts in urban environments have often included large expenditures for outdoor pedestrian spaces. Many such amenity spaces have failed to receive more than light use. This failure has been attributed partly to a general disregard for the physical-comfort needs of the users [1].

The need for thermal comfort is ubiquitous, but it seems often to be forgotten in the designs of outdoor spaces. On the other hand human comfort and energy use of buildings are affected by the local climate conditions within the urban canopy [2] and the microclimate in the urban environment may have a great influence on thermal comfort and the human body.

In warm climates, it is well known that mental and physical performance deteriorates at high temperatures and that heat stress may lead to heat-related illness [3]. Moreover, when the body's adaptive mechanisms to heat stress fail to keep core body temperature close to 37°C, a number of physiological disorders can occur. Among the more common are: Heat exhaustion, heat stroke, heart attack [4].

Thermal comfort is defined as the condition of mind which expresses satisfaction with the thermal environment [5]. Variables of thermal comfort are the air temperature, radiant temperature, relative humidity, air velocity, activity and clothing [6]. The microclimatic factors are affected by the urban surface and at a given point; these factors affect the human activities from ground level up to 2 m height.

Recently, the importance of the concept of thermal comfort can be noticed in the latest related scientific researches. Some studies have focused on the influence of urban design and urban geometry on outdoor thermal comfort [7, 8]. Some others have focused on thermal comfort and outdoor activity in urban public places [9]. Others tried to study the thermal perception, adaption and attendance in urban public spaces [10].

This study is part of a project in the city of Damascus, Syria (see Figure 1).which aims to point out the impact of current urban design on microclimate and outdoor thermal comfort in a hot dry climate during summer and winter. This is an area of research which has received little attention in the Middle East from the architectural perspective and it would be the first study of its kind in Damascus.

The main aim of this study is to examine the influence of outdoor urban spaces on people's subjective perception of thermal comfort. The aim is also to examine how people experience the thermal environment in outdoor urban spaces during summer and winter time in Damascus as an example of the hot dry climate.

This study is based on over 720 structured interviews to evaluate people's actual thermal perception and to estimate the aesthetical qualities of places in six different types of outdoor spaces in Damascus city (streets, parks, spaces between buildings). This study also takes into account the influence of the use of air conditioning devices on people's thermal perception in outdoor urban spaces.



Figure 1: The location of Damascus city in Syria.

## 2. The city of Damascus

The city of Damascus (Elevation: 620 meters, Latitude: 33.5°N, Longitude: 36.5°E) is located in south-west of Syrian Arab Republic in the Middle East.

Damascus (Latitude: 33.5°N) has a hot dry climate but it is actually located on the limit of hot dry zone which is normally found between latitudes 15° and 35°. Damascus has two main parts:

1. The old part. Old Damascus has a wealth of historical sites dating back to many different periods of the city's history. It has a regular planning in general; with streets oriented N–S and E–W. Typical style of architecture in Old Damascus is simple from outside and rich from inside with an inward orientation to the courtyards. Narrow streets and canyons are the main form of outdoor urban spaces in Old Damascus.

2. The modern part. The approach to urban design changed radically during the French colonial period 1920–1945. New areas were built with wide streets in a grid pattern and buildings were outwardly oriented [11]. The current features of architecture in modern Damascus were derived from the master plan made by French architect Michel Ecochar. Ecochar presented the new master plan for Damascus in 1968 and in addition he developed new planning regulations for Damascus which determined urban form for a duration of 20 years 1965–1985. Michel Ecochar's master plan and his planning regulations were the essential documents when updating the next urban regulations in Damascus in 1997.

## 3. Climate in Damascus

Damascus has hot sunny summers from June to August and mild winters from December to February. Snowfall is common in winter on the mountains surrounding Damascus. Summer temperatures can reach in excess of 35°C during the day, but evenings are generally cool. Spring and autumn are the most comfortable periods, averaging 22°C during the day.

The average maximum air temperature according to the weather stations for the period 1961–1990 in Damascus during summer time is 35.6°C and the average minimum temperature during summertime is about 17.6°C. On the other hand, the average maximum air temperature during

winter time is about 13.9°C while the average minimum air temperature during winter time is about 2.5°C, see Figure 2.

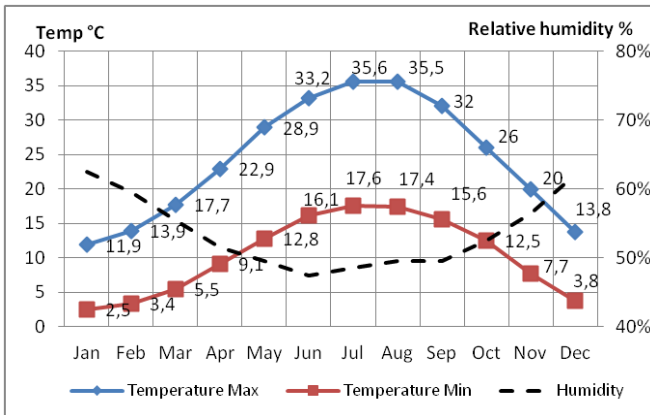


Figure 2: The average values of temperature and relative humidity in Damascus city for the period 1961–90.

## 4. Materials and methods

Field measurements and a questionnaire survey were conducted during summer and winter in Damascus City to describe different thermal environments as well as to determine outdoor thermal comfort. However, this paper discusses only the survey study.

Since the summer and winter seasons in Damascus have the most extreme weather, the study was only conducted during August and September 2009 for the summer, as well as during January and February 2010 for the winter time. In both summer and winter seasons, a survey in outdoor physical environment was carried out through structured interviews, collecting data about thermal sensation, clothing and people's activities both in old and in modern Damascus.

### 4.1 Sample

The sample of this study contained 720 participants of which 360 in the winter season and 360 in the summer season. Six locations were selected for case studies and 60 interviews were conducted in each location. The interviewees were between 20 and 65 years of age of which 78% were males and 22% were females.

### 4.2 Environment of the studied areas

Since outdoor thermal comfort is of importance for residential areas as well as for parks in Damascus, six locations were selected for case studies and were divided into three kinds of categories. The purpose of dividing those six locations into three categories was to study various physical environments in Damascus in order to see the differences between them concerning outdoor thermal comfort and its relationship with urban design. The first category – outdoor spaces in modern Damascus – contained three studied areas: Al Gassany area which is located in the east of Damascus,

see number 2 in Fig. 3, New Dummar area which is located in the west of Damascus, see number 3 in Fig. 3, and Barzza area which is located in north east of Damascus, see number 4 in Fig. 3. The second category – outdoor spaces in Old Damascus – contained only deep canyons and narrow streets and Al Qaymarieh Street was selected to represent Old Damascus, see number 6 in Fig. 3. The third category – parks in modern Damascus – contained two measurement areas: Al Tigara Park which is located in the east of Damascus, see number 1 in Fig. 3, and Al Mazza Park which is located in the west of Damascus, see number 5 in Fig. 3.

The field study took place between 12:00 and 15:00 on both weekdays and weekends. At this time of the day, both the air temperature ( $T_a$ ) and solar radiation reach their daily maximum, and all places have the most visitors. The field study was only performed on days without precipitation. Answers when precipitation occurred were excluded from the analysis.



Figure 3: The six urban spaces in Damascus for the case studies. Read section 4.2.



## 5. Results and discussion

In each season, a total of 360 people were interviewed in order to examine people’s thermal perception, aesthetical qualities of places, and the influence of the use of air conditioning devices on people thermal perception.

### 5.1 Thermal comfort perception

Figure 4 illustrates the clear differences between people’s answers concerning thermal comfort perception in both the summer and winter seasons (Chi-square = 294.6, P=.000, df = 8). Figure 4 shows that the people’s thermal perception in the summer time is between cool and very hot, whereas in winter time their thermal perception is between very cold and hot. The majority of people feel comfortable in the winter time whereas they feel hot in the summer time. The result shows that the distribution of the answers are widely spread in both summer and winter seasons and that this is because of differences of people’s thermal perceptions besides the complexity of the outdoor thermal environment concerning the weather conditions. A similar distribution between the summer and winter seasons has been found in the subtropical climate of Sydney, Australia [12].

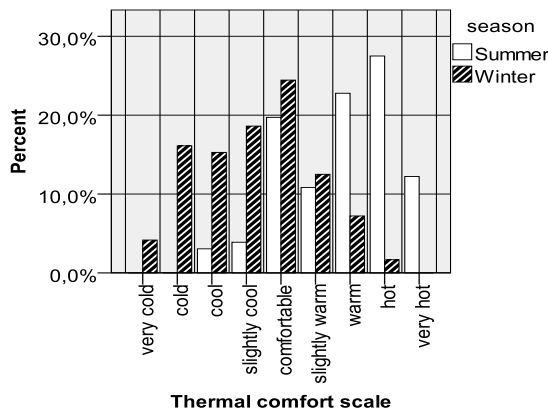


Figure 4: Percentage frequencies for people's thermal perception in both summer and winter seasons.

### 5.2 Aesthetical quality of the place

Figure 5 shows the percentage frequencies for the aesthetical quality of the places (beautifulness, ugliness). Result shows that the majority of the people, 72% and 82% in summer and winter respectively, experience the same places during the summer and winter seasons as beautiful whereas, only 18% and 13% in summer and winter respectively experience the places as neutral, and 10% and 5% in summer and winter respectively experience the places as ugly (Chi-square = 10.52, P=.005, df = 2). In addition, the results show that the people experience the same places in the winter season more beautiful than in the summer season. The results imply that, people's perception of beauty is influenced by the weather and climate. The result agrees with other studies in different climates [13].

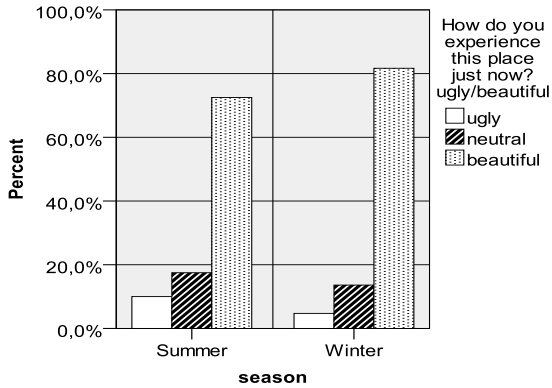


Figure 5: Percentage frequencies for people's perception of beauty in both summer and winter seasons.

Figure 6 illustrates the percentage frequencies for the aesthetical quality of the places (pleasantness, unpleasantness). Result shows that the majority of the people, 68% and 78% in summer and winter respectively, experience the same places during summer and winter seasons as pleasant whereas, only 19% and 16% in summer and winter respectively experience the place as neutral, and 13% and 6% in summer and winter respectively experience the place as unpleasant (Chi-square = 11.14,  $P = .004$ ,  $df = 2$ ). In addition, result shows that the people experience the same places in the winter season more pleasant than in the summer season. The results imply that people's perception of pleasantness is influenced by the weather and climate. The result agrees with other studies in different climates [14].

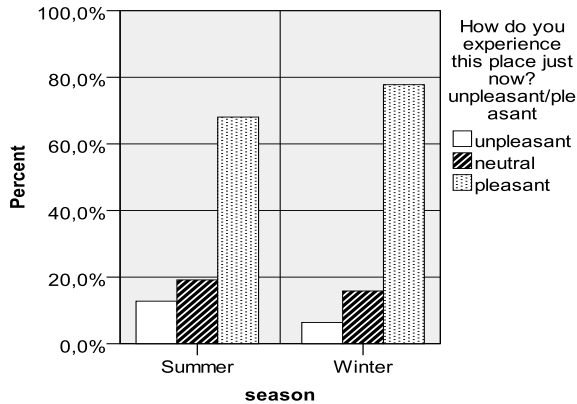


Figure 6: Percentage frequencies for people's perception of beauty (pleasantness) in both summer and winter seasons.

### 5.3 The influence of air conditioning devices on thermal comfort

Since Damascus has a hot dry climate, people usually have air conditioning devices either at home or at work. Figure 7 shows the percentage frequency in summer and winter seasons for people who use the air conditioning devices and for those who do not. The result shows that around 73% of the interviewees use air conditioning devices whereas, 27% of the interviewees do not use them. Thus, air conditioning devices in Damascus city are widely used during summer and winter time either for heating or for cooling purposes. This can be explained by the lack of the comfortable conditions and the need for better thermal adaption between indoor and outdoor environment.

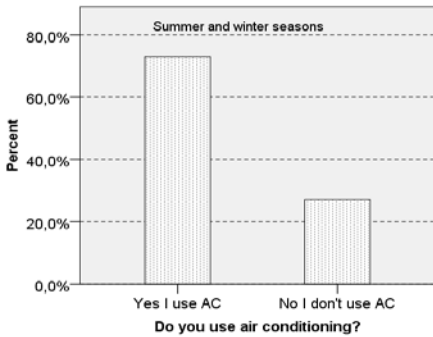


Figure 7: Percentage frequencies for people who use the air conditioning devices.

Figure 8 shows the influence of the use of air conditioning devices on people's outdoor thermal perception in summer time. The result shows that there is no significant difference between the people who use air conditioning and those who do not concerning outdoor thermal perception (Chi-square = 6.3, P=.390, df = 6).

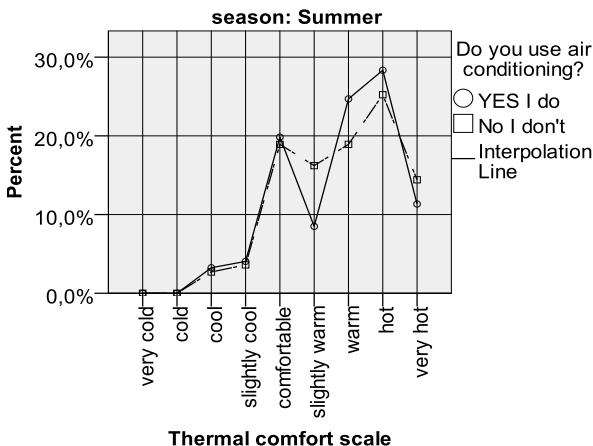


Figure 8: The influence of the air conditioning devices on people's outdoor thermal perception in summer season.

Figure 9 reveals the effect of the use of air conditioning devices on people's thermal perception in winter time. Figure 9 illustrates that there is no significant difference between the people who use air conditioning and the people who do not concerning outdoor thermal perception (Chi-square = 10.5,  $P = .162$ ,  $df = 7$ ).

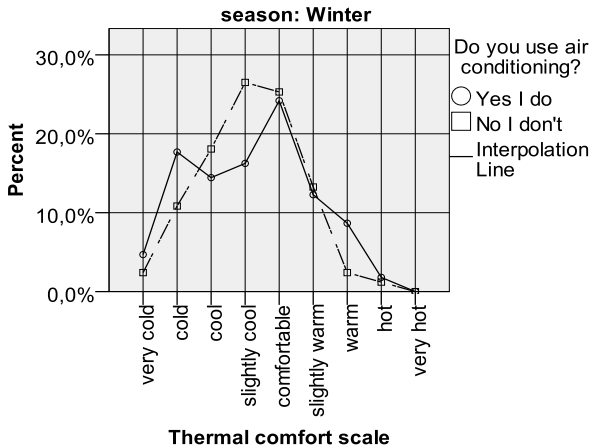


Figure 9: The influence of the air conditioning devices on people's outdoor thermal perception in winter season.

Consequently, there is no clear relationship between outdoor thermal perception and the use of air conditioning devices. The reason could be that people adapt quickly to their outdoor conditions in spite of the differences between indoor and outdoor environments.

Other studies for indoor environments reported that there is significant difference between the people who use air conditioning at home or in the office and the people who do not concerning thermal comfort perception [15].

## 6. Conclusions

As regards the thermal comfort in Damascus city, the influence of micro-climate on people's thermal perception in the summer season is completely different from the influence in the winter season at the same places. In summer time, the study found that the majority of interviewees felt hot. This can be improved by enhancing the urban design [16] in Damascus city as well as by adding trees or shading devices [17] in order to provide shade for people who pass or linger on these places.

In spite of the differences in people's thermal perception at the same places between summer and winter seasons, people experience the places as beautiful and pleasant regardless of the differences in seasons. So the current urban design of the study areas has been recognized by interviewees as beautiful and pleasant. On the other hand, the beautifulness and the pleasantness of the place is affected by the quality of the urban design. In addition, thermal comfort is very well needed for enhancing the quality of the urban spaces especially in a hot dry climate. Therefore, the considera-

tions of outdoor thermal comfort should be taken into account in the urban design process.

Regarding the influence of the use of air conditioning devices on people's outdoor thermal perception, no significant result was reported in spite of the big number of the people who use air conditioning devices. However, when people use air conditioning, the microclimate in the summer time will be negatively affected because the exhaust heat from the air conditioning devices will lead to increased air temperatures in outdoor urban spaces. Therefore, encouraging people's desire to spend much more time in outdoor urban spaces will help to reduce the use of air conditioning. On the other hand, the good quality of urban design is needed to attract people to spend time in outdoor environments.

## 7. Future studies

More studies, including both summer and winter seasons will be performed within the framework of the project including statistical analysis of the emotional states, preferable weather conditions, and evaluating the outdoor activities for the people who live in Damascus. In addition, simulation studies will be conducted in order to give examples to enhance the thermal environment in outdoor urban spaces in Damascus city.

## 8. References

- [1] W. H. Whyte (1972), Please, just a nice place to sit. *N.Y. Times Sunday Mag.* 3 Dec. 1972.
- [2] B. Givoni (1998), *Climate considerations in buildings and urban design.* New York: Van Nostrand Reinhold.
- [3] D.A. McIntyre (1980), *Indoor climate*, Applied Science Publishers Ltd, London.
- [4] P.A. Bell (red) (2001), *Environmental psychology*, Fort Worth.Tex: Harcourt College.
- [5] H.J. Plumley (1977), Design of outdoor urban spaces for thermal comfort. In: Heisler, Gordon M.; Herrington, Lee P (Red). *Proceedings of the conference on metropolitan physical environment; Gen. Tech. Rep. NE-25.*, 152–162. PA: U.S. Upper Darby.
- [6] ASHRAE (2004), *Thermal environmental condition for human occupancy.* Atlanta: American Society of Heating.
- [7] E. Johansson (2006a), Influence of urban geometry on outdoor thermal comfort in a hot dry climate: A study in Fez, Morocco. *Building and Environment* 41: 1326–1338.
- [8] E. Johansson (2006b), *Urban design and outdoor thermal comfort in warm climates – studies in Fez and Colombo.* PhD Thesis, Housing Development & Management, Lund University, Lund, Sweden.
- [9] I. Knez and S. Thorsson (2007), Thermal, emotional and perceptual evaluation of a park: Cross-cultural and environmental attitude comparison. *Building and Environment*, 43 (2008) 1483-1490.
- [10] T. Ping Lin (2009), Thermal perception, adaption and attendance in a public square in hot and humid regions. *Journal of Building and Environment*, 44, 2017–2026.
- [11] K. Al-Kodmany (1999), Residential Visual Privacy: Traditional and Modern Architecture and Urban Design. *Journal of Urban Design*, 04, 283–312.
- [12] J. Spagnolo and R. de Dear (2003), A field study of the thermal comfort in outdoor and semioutdoor environments in subtropical Sydney Australia. *Building and Environment*, 38,721–738.
- [13] I. Knez (2003), *Climate: A nested structure in places.* The 5th International Conference on Urban Climate (ICUC-5) (pp. 65–67). Poland: University of Lodz.

- [14] I. Knez and S. Thorsson (2006). Influences of culture and environmental attitude on thermal, emotional and perceptual evaluations of a square. *International Journal of Biometeorology*, 50, 258–268.
- [15] J.F. Busch (1992), A tale of two populations: thermal comfort in air-conditioned and naturally ventilated offices in Thailand. *Energy and Buildings* 18:235–249.
- [16] F. Ali-Toudert and H. Mayer (2007), Effects of asymmetry, galleries, overhanging facades and vegetation on thermal comfort in urban street canyons. *Solar Energy*, 81, 742–754.
- [17] J.M. Ochoa and R. Serra (2009), Vegetation influences on the human thermal comfort in outdoor spaces. Retrieved June 10, 2010, from School of Architecture of Barcelona, Dept. Construccions Arquitectòniques I & Dept. Física Aplicada, Web site:  
<http://www.fa.upc.es/personals/jroset/lyonvege.html>.

# Paper 5

*Originally published in Journal of Earth Science and Engineering*





# Microclimate in hot dry Damascus: The influence of the urban environment on human perception

Moohammed Wasim Yahia, Erik Johansson.  
Housing Development & Management, Lund University, Sweden.

## Abstract

There is a broad recognition that microclimatic conditions contribute to the quality of life in cities. A favorable microclimate has a positive influence on both commercial and social activities. The aim of this study is to investigate the relationship between the human being and the surrounding thermal environment in terms of thermal acceptability, physical quality of the place, emotional state and the usage of the urban space in hot dry Damascus, Syria. The study is based on questionnaire surveys during the summer and winter in six locations with different microclimates. It is shown that the urban design plays a significant role in improving the microclimate, especially during the summer. The study also illustrates that when people's thermal perception is within the thermally acceptable range (i.e. slightly cool, comfortable and slightly warm) they experience the urban design as significantly more beautiful and more pleasant than during thermally unacceptable conditions. The results indicate that there is an interactive relationship between the urban design and humans' emotional state. Our findings suggest that a new perspective is needed for determining urban microclimate requirements and incorporating them into the urban design process to enhance the thermal environment in outdoor urban spaces in Damascus.

**Keywords:** Damascus; Hot dry climate; outdoor urban spaces; thermal perception; urban design

## 1. Introduction

In the city development, the importance of creating successful urban spaces has become a fundamental demand for architects, designers and planners. The quality of the urban spaces has received a great attention not only from social and economical perspectives, but also from an environmental point of view. In connection to this, the role of microclimate and thermal comfort is an essential component for the quality of outdoor urban spaces. The combination of urban design, urban microclimate and thermal comfort is useful to enhance the attractiveness of the urban spaces and to

develop the built environment in the city. Recently, the concept of outdoor thermal comfort has received increased attention in scientific research.

Some studies have focused on the influence of urban design and urban morphology on outdoor thermal comfort. Johansson [1] investigated the influence of urban geometry on outdoor thermal comfort by comparing shallow and deep street canyons in Fez, Morocco. By conducting measurements, the author found that the deep canyon was considerably cooler than the shallow one during the summer whereas in winter, the shallow canyon was more comfortable as solar access is possible. Yahia and Johansson [2] investigated the influence of urban planning regulations and urban morphology on outdoor thermal comfort for attached and detached buildings. The authors indicated that for deep canyons, there is an interactive relationship between aspect ratio, orientation and vegetation.

However, for detached buildings, there is only a weak influence of street orientation and aspect ratio but a strong influence of vegetation on outdoor thermal comfort. Some other studies have focused on the influences of culture and environmental attitude on thermal, emotional and perceptual evaluations of urban public places. Knez and Thorsson [3] examined the influence of culture for Swedes and Japanese by investigating the influence of environmental attitude on peoples' thermal, emotional and perceptual assessments of a square. The authors argued that the persons living in different cultures with different environmental attitudes would psychologically evaluate the space differently despite similar thermal conditions. Other studies have focused on the influence of environment on outdoor thermal comfort. Yahia and Johansson [4] examined the influence of urban spaces on people's thermal perception in the city of Damascus. The authors found clear differences between people's thermal perception in both summer and winter seasons. They also argued that the people's perception of pleasantness and beautifulness is influenced by the weather and climate. Other studies have investigated the thermal perception, adaption and attendance in urban public spaces. Lin [5] examined people's thermal comfort in a public square in Taiwan. By conducting physical measurements and questionnaires, the author indicated that the thermal comfort range and neutral temperatures of the people were higher than those of people in a temperate region. In addition, local people in Taiwan preferred cool temperatures and weak sunlight, and adapted themselves to the thermal environment by seeking shelter outdoors. The study concluded that the psychological and behavioral factors play important roles in outdoor thermal comfort.

Although these and other studies provided useful insights in the field of microclimate and thermal comfort, there is still a need to examine the relationship between people's thermal comfort, perception, emotional states and physical characteristics of urban spaces in all types of thermal environments especially in regions with warm climates where both global and urban warming have a negative impact on the physical environment, people's thermal perception, physical and mental performance as well as health problems [6]. Therefore, the aim of this study is to investigate the relationship between the human and the surrounding thermal environment in terms of thermal acceptability, physical quality of the urban design, humans' emotional state and the usage of urban space during summer and winter in the hot dry city of Damascus, Syria. The aim of this study is to highlight the role of thermal perception, aesthetics, psychological aspects and the use of space in hot dry Damascus where the microclimate is one of the main factors that can provide better urban design.

## 2. Methodology

### 2.1 The location and climate of Damascus

Damascus city (Elevation: 620 meters, Latitude: 33.5° N, Longitude: 36.5° E) is located in the south-west of the Syrian Arab Republic in the Middle East (see Fig.1) and It has two main parts:

1. The old part: It has a regular planning in general, with N-S and E-W street orientation. Most streets are narrow in the form of deep canyons and the buildings have inward orientation to the courtyards.

2. The modern part: The approach to urban design changed radically during the French colonial period (1920–45). New areas were built with wide streets in a grid pattern and buildings were outwardly oriented [7]. Damascus is surrounded by an oasis – the Ghouta region – watered by the Barada River that used to provide the city with drinking water.

Damascus has sunny summers (June to August) and fairly cold winters (December to February). Summer temperatures can reach in excess of 35°C during the day, but evenings are generally cool. In winter, minimum temperatures can reach 0°C. Snowfall is common in winter on the mountains surrounding the city. Spring and autumn have the most comfortable climate with average temperatures in the range of 16 to 20°C (see Fig. 2).



Fig. 1 The location of the city of Damascus in Syria

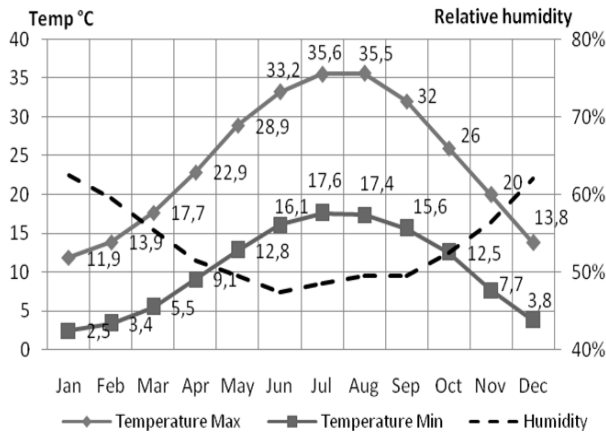


Fig. 2 The average values of temperature and relative humidity in Damascus city for the period 1961-90. Source: Damascus airport meteorological station

## 2.2 Structured interviews

Micrometeorological measurements and structured interviews were conducted during the summer and winter in Damascus to describe different thermal environments as well as to determine the outdoor thermal comfort. However, this paper discusses only the questionnaire survey study. The study was conducted during August and September 2009 for the summer, and during January and February 2010 for the winter. The sample of this study contained 720 participants of which 360 in the winter season and 360 in the summer season. Six locations were selected and 60 interviews were conducted in each location. The interviewees were between 20 and 65 years of age of which 78% were males and 22% were females. These six locations were divided into three categories that represent the most common urban environments in

Damascus. The first category – outdoor spaces in modern Damascus – contained three studied areas: Al Gassany area which is located in the east of Damascus (see Picture b in Fig. 3), New Dummar area which is located in the west of Damascus, see picture c in Fig. 3, and Barzza area which is located in north east of Damascus (see picture d in Fig. 3). The second category – outdoor spaces in Old Damascus – contained deep canyons and narrow streets and Al Qaymarieh Street was selected to represent Old Damascus (see picture f in Fig. 3). The third category – parks in modern Damascus – contained two areas: Al Tigara Park which is located in the east of Damascus (see picture a in Fig. 3), and Al Mazza Park which is located in the west of Damascus (see picture e in Fig. 3).



Fig. 3 Studied locations in the city of Damascus, where (a) is Al Tigara park, (b) is Al Gassany area, (c) is New Dummar area, (d) is Barzza area, (e) is Al Mazza park, and (f) is Old Damascus [9]

The field study took place between 12:00 and 15:00 in both weekdays and weekends. At this time of the day, both the air temperature ( $T_a$ ) and solar radiation reach their daily maximum, and all places have the most visitors. The questionnaires were designed to assess people's thermal perception and the people were asked to report their perceptions by responding to a 9-point scale ranging as the following: very cold, cold, cool, slightly cool, comfortable, slightly warm, warm, hot and very hot [8]. The questionnaires were also designed to assess the climatic and aesthetical preferences in Damascus, and it covered questions about gender and age, clothing, living or working in the city, the reason for being in the places, time spent outdoors and in the places, the assessment of the microclimate, the aesthetic qualities of the place, emotional state, preferred weather conditions and the attitude to urban outdoor exposure. This paper however, only discusses the results of thermal comfort and urban design, aesthetical quality of the place, thermal acceptability, emotional states and the results of the use of urban spaces. SPSS 18 (Statistical Package for the Social Sciences Software for Windows) was used to analyze the answers by calculating frequencies and Pearson Chi-Square test.

## 3. Results

### 3.1 Microclimate and urban design

Fig. 4 shows the frequency distribution of how people experience the place when their thermal perception is within the thermal acceptable range (i.e. slightly cool, comfortable and slightly warm) [5] during the summer and winter. In summer – although the weather conditions were similar in all

studied locations – Fig. 4a illustrates that people thermally accept the microclimate in Old Damascus more than the microclimate in parks, whereas they thermally accept the microclimate in parks slightly more than the microclimate in modern Damascus (Chi-square = 11.27, P = 0.004, df = 2). In contrast to the summer results, Fig. 4b reveals that people in winter thermally accept the microclimate in the residential areas of modern Damascus more than the microclimate in the parks, whereas they thermally accept the microclimate in the parks more than the microclimate in Old Damascus (Chi-square = 24.09, P = 0.000, df = 2). It should be noted that the studied day in Old Damascus was very cold, which at least partly may explain the results.

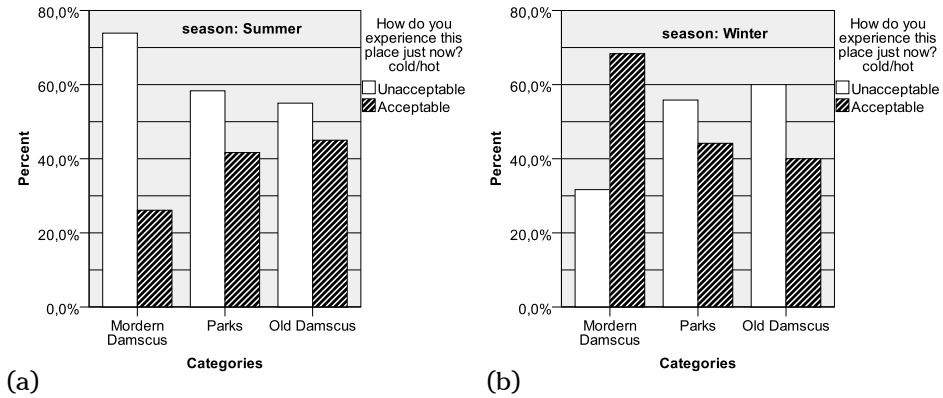


Fig. 4 The frequency distribution of how people thermally experience the place in modern Damascus, parks and Old Damascus during (a) summer and (b) winter

The results reflect the strong influence of the urban morphology and urban design on microclimate and thermal comfort. Old Damascus has deep canyons with high aspect ratios. This has a positive effect on the microclimate and the outdoor thermal comfort in summer because the direct short wave radiation from the sun, and consequently the mean radiant temperature – which considers both short-wave and long-wave radiation and represents the weighted average temperature of an imaginary enclosure that gives the same radiation as the complex urban environment – decrease with the increase of the aspect ratio. In contrast, the outdoor spaces in modern Damascus have low aspect ratios and therefore these spaces are more exposed to solar radiation, and thus the mean radiant temperature increases, which is positive in the winter. In the parks, the open space can be similar to modern Damascus but the trees and vegetation help to create some shade that mitigate the thermal stress. The results illustrate that the urban design plays a significant role in creating different microclimates. This agrees well with other studies, e.g. [1].

### 3.2 Preferable microclimate in the urban spaces of Damascus

Fig. 5 illustrates the percentage distribution of how people prefer the microclimate in the urban spaces of Damascus – during summer and winter –

in terms of the exposure towards the solar radiation and air temperatures. In summer, Fig. 5a reveals that the majority of people in Damascus prefer more shaded spaces whereas in winter, the highest percentage shows that the people prefer no change. Conversely, people in the winter season prefer to be exposed to the solar radiation more than to be in shade (Chi-square = 243,  $P = 0.000$ ,  $df = 2$ ).

Fig. 5b shows that the majority of people in Damascus during the summer time prefer the microclimate to be colder than it was during the survey whereas in winter, the highest percentage reveals that the people prefer no change. Conversely, people in the winter season prefer the microclimate to be warmer than, or equal to, what it was (Chi-square = 280,  $P = 0.000$ ,  $df = 2$ ).

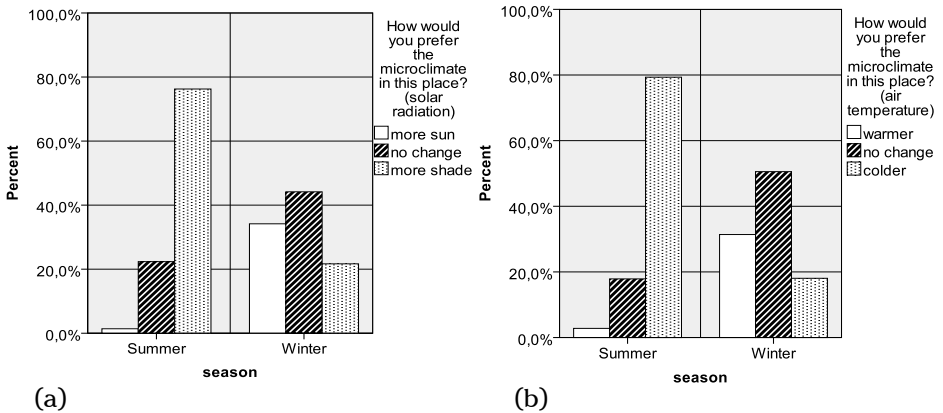


Fig. 5 The frequency distribution of how people prefer the microclimate in the urban spaces of Damascus during the summer and winter in terms of (a) the exposure to the solar radiation and (b) air temperatures

The results indicate that seeking shade in urban spaces of Damascus during the summer season is a key issue to create better urban design. This is also confirmed by the fact that people in Damascus seek colder microclimates during the summer. This can be explained by the phenomenon that applies the concept of alliesthesia [10] which is a sort of psychological mechanism that explains the differences in perception between seasons, i.e. if the people – for example – feel warm, anything that make them feel colder would be pleasant and vice versa. This also agrees with other studies in other climates [11].

### 3.3 Aesthetical quality and thermal perception

Fig. 6 shows the frequency distribution of how people experience the place in terms of beautifulness and ugliness. Fig. 6a illustrates that when people's thermal perception is within the thermal acceptable range; people perceive the urban design as more pleasant than when their thermal perception is out of the thermally acceptable range. (Chi-square = 13.68,  $P = 0.001$ ,  $df = 2$ ). In addition, Fig. 6b shows that when people's thermal perception is within the thermally acceptable range, they perceive the urban design as more beautiful than when their thermal perception is out of the thermally



acceptable range. (Chi-square = 17.26, P = 0.000, df = 2). Fig. 6 reveals that people’s perception of aesthetical quality of the urban design is affected by the weather and climate. The results agree well with other studies in the same climate [4].

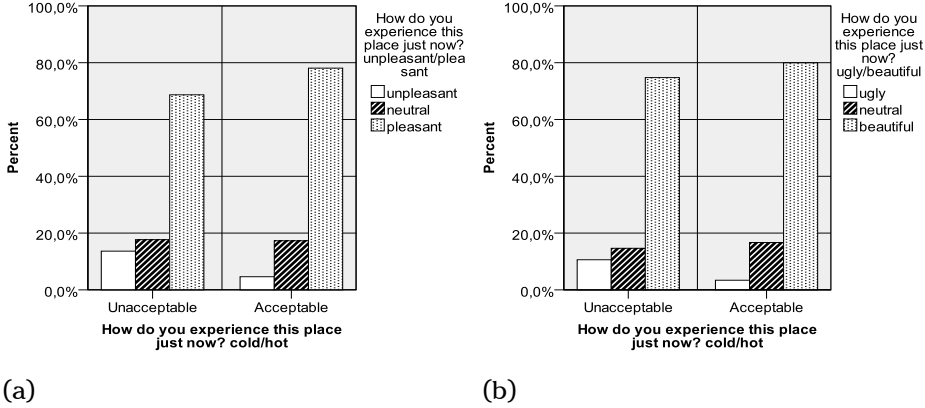


Fig. 6 The frequency distribution of how people who feel either thermally acceptable or unacceptable experience the aesthetical quality of the place in terms of (a) pleasantness and (b) beautifulness

### 3.4 Urban design and psychological effects

Fig. 7 illustrates the frequency distribution of how people feel and how the urban design affects their psychological situation in terms of boredom and elatedness. Generally, the result shows that the people in Damascus are elated when they are outdoors. The result indicates that about 55% of the people in modern Damascus were elated whereas about 27% were neutral and about 18% were bored. In public parks, about 61% of the users were elated whereas about 26% were neutral and about 13% were bored. In Old Damascus, about 67% of the users were elated whereas about 29% were neutral and about 4% were bored. Fig. 7 reveals that the people in Old Damascus were more elated than those in the parks. In parks, the people in modern Damascus (Chi-square = 16.26, P = 0.003, df = 4). The result shows that the type of urban design and the physical properties of the place affect the human’s psychological perception. It also can be said that the combination of microclimate parameters, thermal perception, cultural background and aesthetical qualities of the space have an impact on a person’s psychological perception. This agrees with other studies that investigated the influence of culture and environmental attitude on thermal, emotional and perceptual evaluation of the urban space [3].

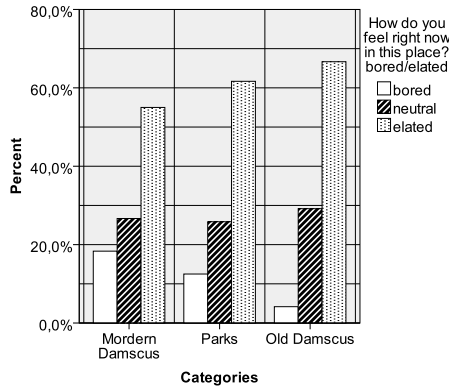


Fig. 7 The frequency distribution of how people feel and how the urban design affects people’s psychological perception in terms of boredom and elatedness.

### 3.5 Enhancing the use of urban spaces

Fig. 8 shows the frequency distribution of the most important reason for people to be outdoors in modern Damascus (residential areas), parks and Old Damascus. The result illustrates that the main reason for being in modern Damascus – for about 75% of the users – is to go to work, home, or school, whereas about 20% of users were there to meet other people, relax and get some fresh air. Regarding the public parks, about 64% of the users go to the parks to meet other people, relax and get some fresh air, whereas about 30% were there for going to work, home, or school. In Old Damascus, about 48% of the users passed by in order to meet other people, relax and get some fresh air, whereas about 48% were there for going to work, home, or school.

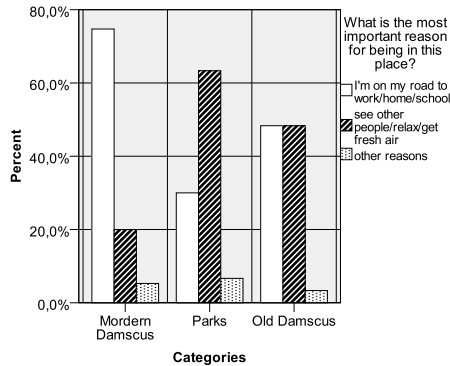


Fig. 8 The frequency distribution of how people use the outdoor urban spaces in Modern Damascus, parks and Old Damascus

Fig. 8 reveals that people tend to go to the park mainly to have some fresh air, meet other people and relax, whereas only 20% of the users in modern Damascus use the urban spaces for recreational reasons (Chi-square = 127.07, P = 0.000, df = 4). Another study in a different climate found that the most important reason for being in the square is going to work, home, or to school, whereas the reason for being in the park was to

get fresh air, to exercise, etc [12]. These results show that the difference between the studied areas in terms of urban design has an impact on the chosen activity by people. Thus, the results highlight the importance of improving the urban spaces in residential areas in modern Damascus so as to encourage people to spend time outdoors for recreational reasons and not only for passing by on the way to work, school or home.

## 4. Discussion

This study highlights the relationship between urban design, microclimate and thermal comfort in outdoor urban spaces. The study illustrates that the urban design plays a significant role in improving the microclimate, especially during the summer. Moreover, the study reveals that people's perception of the aesthetical quality of the urban design is affected by the weather and climate. Furthermore, the study shows that the majority of the people in Damascus tend to go to parks mainly to have some fresh air, meet other people and relax, whereas only 20% of the users in modern Damascus use the urban spaces for recreational reasons.

The study indicates that in summer the people in Damascus seek shade and prefer the climate to be colder. These two results have the same tendency (see Figs. 5a and 5b). This can be important information for architects and urban designers to be considered in their proposals for hot dry climates.

The study also investigated people's emotional state in Damascus and showed that there is a link between the surrounding environment and the psychological perception. Gifford [13] argued that the people that have a positive mood compared to those in a less positive mood rated the interior environment as more pleasant. For the outdoor environment, the situation is more complicated due to other climatic parameters which strongly affect the users such as wind speed, solar radiation, reflected radiation, humidity, etc. On the other hand, the physical qualities of the outdoor space also affect the human emotional states. For example, if the person is elated, he/she might perceive the outdoor space as more pleasant and more beautiful than the one who is bored. It might be also the opposite, i.e. if the place is beautiful and pleasant, this might affect a person's emotional state and this person will become more elated. Therefore, the study suggests that there is an interactive relationship between the human being and the surrounding environment, and this relationship will affect and be affected by the human perception at all levels e.g. thermal, emotional, aesthetical, cultural, etc.

## 5. Conclusion

The study concludes that the outdoor environment has a considerable effect on human perception and behavior. In order to design better urban spaces in the city, these parameters must be highlighted. One way to understand and control the relationship – between humans and the surrounding environment – is to enhance the urban design quality in the outdoor spaces considering all these parameters. One of the aspects that can help to enhance the urban design is to improve the microclimate in residential areas in modern Damascus and to increase the thermal comfort in outdoor urban spaces, especially during summer which is the most problematic

season in hot dry Damascus. These improvements can help to encourage people to spend more time outdoors than indoors.

Regarding microclimate and thermal comfort, the findings suggest that a new perspective is needed for determining urban microclimate requirements and incorporating them into the urban design process. This can be done by considering microclimate and thermal comfort in urban planning regulations, to develop outdoor urban spaces and to enhance the quality of life.

More studies can be performed including further statistical analysis of the emotional states, preferable weather conditions, and evaluating the outdoor activities for the people who live in Damascus. In addition, simulation studies can also be conducted in order to enhance the thermal environment in Damascus' urban spaces by using different types of vegetation and landscape elements which affect the urban design and outdoor thermal comfort.

## Acknowledgements

This study was financially supported by Erasmus Mundus External Cooperation Window Lot 3 and Lund University, Sweden.

## References

- [1] E. Johansson, Influence of urban geometry on outdoor thermal comfort in a hot dry climate: A study in Fez, Morocco, *Journal of Building and Environment* 41(2006) 1326-1338
- [2] M.W. Yahia, E. Johansson, Influence of urban planning regulations on the microclimate in a hot dry climate: The example of Damascus, Syria. *Journal of Housing and Built Environment* 28 (2013) 51-65
- [3] I. Knez, S. Thorsson, Influences of culture and environmental attitude on thermal, emotional and perceptual evaluations of a square. *International Journal of Biometeorology* 50 (2006) 258-268
- [4] M.W. Yahia, E. Johansson, The influence of environment on people's thermal comfort in outdoor urban spaces in hot dry climates - The example of Damascus, Syria, in: 27th International conference on Passive and Low Energy Architecture, Louvain-la-Neuve, Belgium, 2011
- [5] T.P. Lin, Thermal perception, adaptation and attendance in a public square in hot and humid regions, *Journal of Building and Environment* 44 (2009) 2017-2026
- [6] P.A. Bell, *Environmental psychology*, Fort Worth. Texas: Harcourt College, 2001
- [7] K. Al-Kodmany, Privacy: traditional and modern architecture and urban design, *Journal of Urban Design* 4 (1999) 283-312
- [8] A. Matzarakis, H. Mayer, Another kind of environmental stress: thermal stress, WHO Collaborating Centre for Air Quality Management and Air Pollution Control, *Newsletters* 18 (1996) 7-10
- [9] M.W. Yahia, E. Johansson, Evaluating the behaviour of different thermal indices by investigating various outdoor urban environments in the hot dry city of Damascus, Syria, *International Journal of Biometeorology* 57 (2013) 615-630
- [10] I.U.P.S., Thermal-Commission, Glossary of terms for thermal physiology, *The Japanese Journal of Physiology* 51 (2001) 245-280
- [11] J. Spagnolo, R. de Dear, A field study of the thermal comfort in outdoor and semi outdoor environments in subtropical Sydney Australia, *Journal of Building and Environment* 38 (2003) 721-738
- [12] S. Thorsson, T. Honjo, F. Linberg, I. Eliasson, E.M. Lim, Thermal comfort and out- door activity in Japanese urban public places, *Journal of Environment and Behavior* 39 (2007) 660-684

[13] R. Gifford, Environmental dispositions and the evaluation of architectural interiors, *Journal of Research in Personality* 14 (1980) 386-399



# Paper 6

*Originally published in Landscape and Urban Planning*





# Landscape interventions in improving thermal comfort in the hot dry city of Damascus, Syria

## –The example of residential spaces with detached buildings

Moohammed Wasim Yahia, Erik Johansson.  
Housing Development & Management, Lund University, Sweden.

### Abstract

The aim of this paper is to explore how vegetation and landscape elements affect the outdoor thermal comfort for detached buildings in hot dry Damascus, Syria by investigating different urban design scenarios. The study uses two different thermal indices and examines two different street orientations in summer and winter using microclimatic simulations with ENVI-met and analyzing the thermal comfort maps for the studied cases. In order to improve the thermal environment of detached urban morphologies in Damascus, the streets and the spaces between buildings must be taken into account in the urban and landscape design processes. Shading is an essential strategy to reduce thermal stress and by using vegetation and shading devices, it is even possible to achieve thermal comfort during the warmest hours in the summer, which is the most problematic season in Damascus. The improvement of the Physiologically Equivalent Temperature (PET) between the existing and suggested urban design for the east-west street orientation at 14:00 is about 19°C. The study discusses advantages and disadvantages of different urban design patterns in Damascus and argues that an efficient use of vegetation and landscape elements positively affects the thermal environment and thus develops the quality of urban design. There is therefore a need for further investigation about the role of vegetation and landscape from a shading perspective taking the 3D form of trees and other landscape elements into account. This is recommended to be linked with urban planning regulations in the city.

**Keywords:** Damascus; Hot dry; Landscape elements; thermal comfort; Vegetation; Urban design.

# 1. Introduction

In the built environment, urban spaces are often characterized by unacceptable microclimate and lack of thermal comfort. Generally, urban microclimate and outdoor thermal comfort are given little importance in the urban design and planning processes (Eliasson, 2000; Johansson, 2006a, 2006b). However, many studies – such as Chow & Brazel (2012) and Ali-Toudert & Mayer (2007) – have highlighted how vegetation and landscape in urban design and planning can improve microclimate and thermal comfort. Akbari et al. (2001) argued that the shade caused by trees intercept solar radiation before it warms the buildings. The authors also found that urban shade trees provide significant benefits by both reducing artificial air-conditioning and lowering air temperatures. Designing environmental urban spaces in harmony with the local climate – using vegetation and landscape elements – is a key issue in hot dry climates, where the temperatures are normally high during the summer. Such high temperatures cause discomfort to the users, in addition to the negative impact on public health (Brown, 2010; Yahia, 2012).

Several studies in hot dry climates have investigated the use of vegetation and landscape as a strategy to improve the microclimate and thermal comfort in outdoor urban spaces. Some studies have dealt with courtyards (Berkovic et al., 2012; Fahmy & Sharples, 2009). Berkovic et al. (2012) studied three different courtyards surrounded by a 9 m high and 12 m wide building and argued that the amount of shade is mainly affected by the courtyard orientation. In addition, shading in hot dry climates has the major role in improving the thermal comfort, while the contribution of wind under all configurations studied is limited and much smaller than the shade contribution. The authors found that the thermal comfort is significantly improved by adding trees and/or galleries to the closed courtyard. Fahmy & Sharples (2009) – who studied courtyards and urban canyons derived from urban planning laws in Cairo – showed examples of more acceptable thermal comfort conditions for some orientations and degrees of urban compactness due to the clustered form with green cool islands and wind flow. Other studies have mainly focused on urban canyons such as Ali-Toudert & Mayer (2007), Bourbia & Awbi (2004a, 2004b) and Johansson (2006a, 2006b). These studies found that using trees in urban canyons is very efficient in improving the thermal comfort. Ali-Toudert and Mayer (2007) investigated the effects of asymmetry, galleries, overhanging façades and vegetation on thermal comfort in urban street canyons for different height to width (H/W) ratio in the hot dry climate. The authors argued – in the case of urban canyons – that the larger opening towards the sky, the higher the heat stress. For the canyons with a smaller sky view, the orientation is decisive and E-W orientations are the most stressful. The authors also found that galleries, overhanging façades and vegetation provide a considerable decrease of the period of sun exposure and therefore improve the thermal comfort. Bourbia & Awbi (2004b) examined and evaluated the effect of different H/W ratios on the shading of street surfaces and ground for different orientations in the hot dry city of EL-Oued, Algeria. By doing simulations, the authors found for the wide urban canyons ( $H/W < 0.5$ ), tall trees should be considered to improve the thermal environment in urban canyons whereas for the narrower canyons ( $H/W > 0.5$ ), taller trees are not expected to have an improvement on thermal environment of the urban canyons. Johansson (2006b) – who investigated the outdoor thermal

comfort in the hot dry city of Fez by making microclimatic simulations – found that the streets with low H/W ratio are preferable during winter whereas in summer, H/W ratio needs to be at least 4 to provide shade and east-west (E–W) street orientation is the most problematic regarding thermal comfort. The author concluded that overhead shading, colonnades, shading devices and trees should be provided to improve the thermal comfort for pedestrians. Yahia and Johansson (2013a) studied streets with detached buildings in Damascus city. They showed that there is only a weak influence of street orientation and aspect ratio but a strong influence of vegetation on surface temperatures and outdoor thermal comfort. The authors concluded that the thermal comfort in existing urban environments in Damascus could be improved by introducing vegetation and landscaping in the urban design process by creating a link between urban landscaping and urban planning regulations. Shashua-Bar et al. (2011) investigated the effect of trees and grass on thermal comfort by measuring the radiant flux in a courtyard in the hot dry climate of the Negev desert. The study showed that adding trees is the most efficient solution economically and this is because grass needs much irrigation. Moreover, grass brings little improvement to the thermal comfort, because it does not provide shade. The study argued that vegetation contributes to the thermal comfort not only by direct shading but also by reducing the long wave emission from courtyard surfaces and by limiting the amount of reflected solar radiation.

Although the previous studies have added new knowledge and provided new insights, they have mainly concentrated on the summer period. There is therefore a need to investigate the winter conditions in the hot dry climate. Thus, the aim of this paper is to explore how vegetation and landscape elements affect the outdoor thermal comfort for detached buildings in hot dry Damascus, Syria by investigating different urban design scenarios. The study uses two different thermal indices. Two different street orientations in summer and winter are examined using microclimatic simulations with ENVI-met and followed by analysis of thermal comfort maps for the studied cases.

## 2. Methods

### 2.1. The city of Damascus

Damascus is the capital and the largest city in Syria. Old Damascus mainly has attached buildings and a compact urban fabric with deep canyons due to the large building footprints. The buildings have an inward orientation towards the courtyards and ecologically friendly construction materials are used. The modern part, on the other hand, has wide streets in a grid pattern and buildings are outwardly oriented (Al-Kodmany, 1999). It includes both attached and detached buildings as a consequence of different master plans (Yahia & Johansson, 2013a). Damascus has a hot dry climate with hot summers and cold winters. The summer period, when temperatures often exceed 35 °C in the afternoon, typically lasts from June to August and sometimes from May to September. During the winter period, normally from December to February, temperatures may fall to below 0 °C at night.

## 2.2. The selection of the studied urban zone

The zone Inhabited Rural Area (IRA) from the current urban planning regulations was selected to be simulated in this study. This zone consists of neighborhoods in the suburbs of Damascus that are surrounded by green areas (see Fig. 1). The IRA urban zone is exemplified by the sub zone of New Planning Area. This sub zone is the most common urban residential zone for new development in Damascus. In addition, it is among the worst examples from a thermal comfort point of view. It contains only detached buildings and has the biggest plot size ( $>600 \text{ m}^2$ ) and the highest maximum building height (15 m). It also contains prescribed setbacks for all sides of the building (Yahia & Johansson, 2013a).

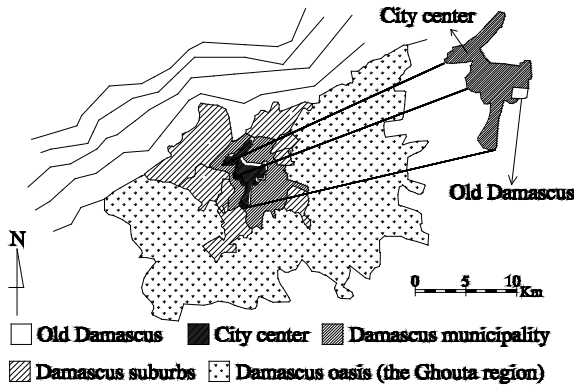


Fig. 1. Simplified map of Damascus city, which is located between the Kassioun mountain chain in the northwest and an oasis in the south. The IRA urban zone is a part of the Damascus suburbs (Yahia & Johansson, 2013b)

## 2.3. Simulation model – structure and limitations

The urban microclimate modeling approach has many advantages. It can be used to investigate the thermal characteristics and energy fluxes in the built environment for different urban design proposals. It gives the possibility of predicting the thermal conditions in high spatial and temporal resolution. Another advantage with the modeling approach is that it makes it possible to investigate an infinite number of spots of the studied area whereas micrometeorological measurements only provide data for a limited number of spots.

For this study, the thermal characteristics of different urban design scenarios at the street level were investigated by ENVI-met 3.1 (Bruse, 2009; Bruse & Fleer, 1998). The program uses a three-dimensional computational fluid dynamics and energy balance model. The model has a high spatial and temporal resolution enabling a detailed study of how the microclimate varies within the studied space over time. The model gives a large amount of output data including the necessary variables to be able to calculate thermal comfort indices. In order to conduct the simulations, the basic data about the geographical position (latitude and longitude) and cloud cover – to determine the components of direct and diffuse solar radiation – have to be defined. The calculations require the initial temperature (which is the

constant temperature at the upper model border at 2500 m), wind speed and its direction at 10 m height and specific humidity at 2500 m and initial relative humidity at 2 m. In addition, the initial temperatures and the soil moisture in the soil layers – at 0–0.2 m, 0.2–0.5 m and 0.5–2 m – have to be defined.

Although ENVI-met is a useful tool to investigate the thermal environment, it has several limitations including:

- The model does not take the thermal mass of the buildings into account and this may affect the surface temperature of the walls and consequently the MRT, especially near the buildings.

- The model sets the same indoor temperature for all buildings (constant value throughout the simulations). In addition, all buildings have the same values of reflectivity for the walls and roofs respectively.

- It is not possible to create complicated building geometries such as curved shapes, sloped elevations and shading devices.

## 2.4. Simulation procedure

In this study, both the summer and winter seasons were simulated. In summer, the study was carried out on the 21st of July since this day is more or less in the middle of the three hottest months in Damascus (June, July and August). In winter, the day 15th of January was studied to represent the winter season because it is in the middle of the three coldest months in Damascus (December, January and February). The simulated period lasted from 5:00 local time (LT) in the morning until 16:00 LT in the afternoon in order to include the maximum air temperature, which normally occurs at 14:00. In addition, the study focused on 12:00, and 16:00 because at 12:00 residential streets are full of students who return back home from school and at 16:00, the streets and urban spaces are full of employees who return back home from work. Both east-west (E–W) and north-south (N–S) street orientations were investigated. The street width was fixed to 12 m since this width is the most common in residential areas in modern Damascus and this was divided into 9 m as a vehicle route and 1.5 m for each pavement.

### 2.4.1 Parametric study

This parametric study consisted of a base case and three additional cases. The base case was modeled according to the urban zone IRA (New Planning Area) and had the following characteristics: plot size 600 m<sup>2</sup> (20 m x 30 m), plot frontage 20 m, plot coverage 40%, maximum building height 15 m, and frontal, rear and side setbacks of 3 m, 4 m, and 5 m respectively (see Fig. 2). For the three cases, only one parameter was changed at a time in order to determine the relative influence of each. The effect of the design parameters – such as H/W ratio, street orientation, spacing between buildings, vegetation and shading devices – on thermal comfort were studied. The characteristics of the three cases in addition to the base case are shown in Fig. 3. The studied parameters have been divided into three main categories:

- Urban morphology: a new extension – with a height of 7 m – was added to the original building (base case) in the front block side. This affects the frontal and the side setbacks as well as the H/W ratio (see Fig. 3b).

- Vegetation: a continuous row of street trees were added along the pavements (see Fig. 3c).

- Vegetation and shading devices: a mixture of horizontal shading devices – over the plot walls as well as the pavement – and street trees were added (see Fig. 3d).

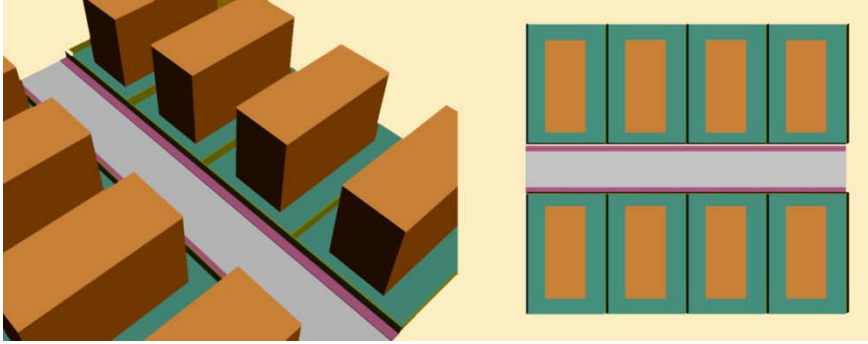
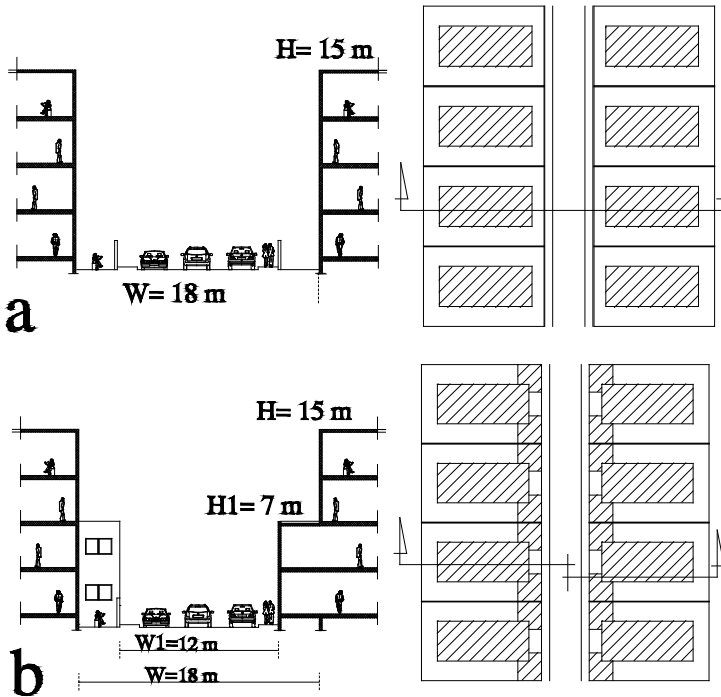


Fig. 2. Perspective and plans of the studied zone IRA (New Planning Area) including the 2 m high wall which surrounds the plots (Yahia & Johansson, 2013a)



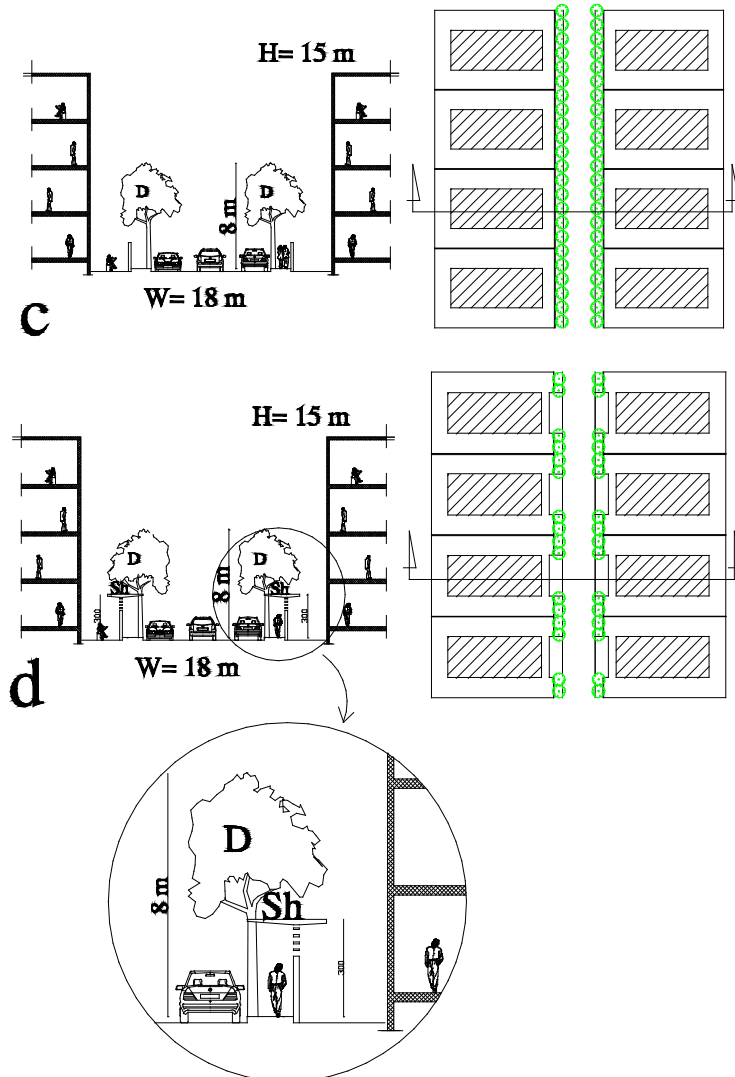


Fig. 3. Sections and plans for the four studied cases where (a) the base case, (b) the case of urban morphology, (c) the case of vegetation and (d) the case of vegetation and shading devices

In order to analyse the studied cases in detail, the public space between the buildings was divided into three zones. For the E-W street orientation, zone A consists of the northern pavement of the street and zone B consists of the southern pavement. For the N-S orientation, zone A is the eastern pavement of the street and zone B is the western pavement. For both orientations zone C consists of the street between zones A and B (see Fig. 4).



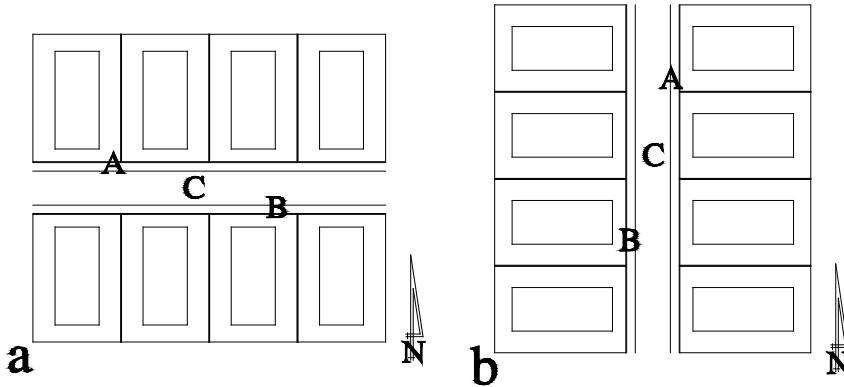


Fig. 4. The division of the public space into zones for (a) E-W and (b) N-S orientations

## 2.5. Model calibration

In order to achieve realistic results, a simulation of an existing urban area in Damascus (150 m x 150 m) was carried out and the results were compared with on site measurements during both summer and winter according to Yahia & Johansson (2013b). The site was modeled as accurately as possible as regards geometry, street orientation and thermal properties of the ground surface materials. Some adjustments were made to some values of the input data – such as initial temperatures of the atmosphere and the soil, wind speed at 10 m above ground level, Specific humidity and relative humidity – as a result of the deviation between simulated and measured results. The general input data which were used in the summer and winter simulations – as a result of the calibration – are shown in Table 1. The model grid resolution was 1 m in all directions (dx, dy and dz).

Several studies have pointed out that ENVI-met underestimates the diurnal temperature fluctuations (Ali-Toudert & Mayer, 2006; Johansson, 2006b). This is because ENVI-met calculates the urban climate at a micro or local scale and that larger regional (meso scale) effects are not taken into account (Bruse, 2009). Since we are mainly interested to study the warmest hours that are normally between 12:00 and 16:00, the input values for the calibration process were set in order to reach the measured values at 14:00 and thus the initial temperature was overestimated at the start of the simulations (hour 5:00).

Table 1 The basic input configuration data used in the ENVI-met simulations for summer and winter. The values used are a result of the calibration process

Category	Configuration data	Summer	Winter
Time	Start of simulation (h)	5:00	5:00
Meteorology	Wind speed at 10 m above ground level [m/s]	2.5	2
	Wind direction [°]	225	225
	Initial temperature of the atmosphere [K]	302	283
	Solar adjustment factor <sup>a</sup>	0.85	0.85
	Specific humidity [g/m <sup>3</sup> ]	7	3
	Relative humidity at 2m [%]	30	65
	Fraction of LOW clouds (x/8)	0	2
	Fraction of MEDIUM clouds (x/8)	0	2
	Fraction of HIGH clouds (x/8)	0	1
Soil	Initial Temperature Upper Layer (0–20 cm) [K]	291	280
	Initial Temperature Middle Layer (20–50 cm) [K]	293	281
	Initial Temperature Deep Layer (below 50 cm) [K]	298	282
	Relative humidity in all layers [%]	25	40
Buildings	Albedo of walls for buildings	0.3	0.3
	Albedo of roofs for buildings	0.3	0.3

<sup>a</sup> The solar radiation, which is calculated depending on latitude, was slightly over-estimated by ENVI-met for Damascus conditions and was therefore decreased to 85%

## 2.6. Assessment of thermal comfort for the simulated models

In this study, thermal comfort was estimated by calculating the two following indices: the Physiologically Equivalent Temperature (PET) (Höppe, 1999) and the Outdoor Standard Effective Temperature (OUT\_SET\*), which is an adaptation of the Standard Effective Temperature (SET\*) for outdoor use (Pickup & de Dear, 2000). PET and OUT\_SET\*, which are expressed in °C, are based on the energy balance of the human body. To calculate PET, air temperature, relative humidity, wind speed and the mean radiant temperature (MRT) – which is a key variable in determining the thermal comfort outdoors – are sufficient, whereas for OUT\_SET\*, the data of clothing and activity are also needed together with the climatic data mentioned above. Although these indices have not been fully calibrated for Damascus – only neutral temperatures and lower and upper limits of thermal comfort for winter and summer respectively were obtained from the calculations (Yahia & Johansson, 2013b) – these indices make it possible to compare different urban design proposals.

For all four cases, the E-W street orientation was simulated for the summer because this orientation is more stressful than N-S (Ali-Toudert & Mayer, 2006; Johansson, 2006b) and the summer is the most problematic season. For the base and the best cases, additional simulations were conducted for the N-S orientation as well as for the winter season. For both street orientations, both PET and OUT\_SET\* were calculated for the base and the best cases. For OUT\_SET\*, the data of clothing and activity were taken from previous studies about Damascus (0.57 clo and 1.5 met for the

summer and 0.97 clo and 1.6 for winter) (Yahia & Johansson, 2013b). In this study, the RayMan PC model (Matzarakis et al, 2007) was used to calculate PET, whereas the ASHRAE Thermal Comfort Program (Fountain & Huizenga, 1994) was used to calculate the OUT\_SET\*.

## 2.7. Modeling of vegetation and landscape elements

The vegetation and landscape elements used were trees and horizontal overhead shading devices. The selection of trees in the urban environment to create a specific urban design can be based on many aspects such as provision of shade, which depends on foliage properties, the type of soil, the type of root system as well as the possibility to adapt to the climate and hazards (Arnold, 1980; Trowbridge & Bassuk, 2004).

The Leaf Area Index (LAI) is defined as the total one-sided leaf surface area (m<sup>2</sup>) per unit ground area (m<sup>2</sup>) and it can be considered simply as the ratio of leaves to ground covered (Ong, 2003). A tree can be divided into horizontal layers with different Leaf Area Density (LAD), which is defined as the total one sided leaf area (m<sup>2</sup>) per unit layer volume (m<sup>3</sup>) in each horizontal layer of the tree. In other words, it can be defined as the total leaf area per unit volume of the horizontal slices along the height of the tree and gives an idea about the vertical leaves distribution (Meir, Grace, & Miranda, 2000; Law, Cescatti, & Baldocchi, 2001b). If the LAD's of the different layers are known, the LAI can be calculated as:

$$LAI = \sum_{i=1}^n LAD_i \times dz \quad (1)$$

Where  $n$  is the number of layers and  $dz$  is the layer thickness (m)

For hot climates, only a few studies such as Kotzen (2003) and Shahidan et al. (2007) have investigated the LAI for trees either by measurements or modelling. However, Fahmy et al. (2010) investigated how trees can be modelled without information of LAI or LAD values. The authors discussed the minimum LAI value of a tree that is needed to produce maximum shadow at peak hour of a mid latitude site. The authors reported that, for the hot dry climate of Cairo, a LAI of 1 can be considered the minimum value of a tree to intercept about half of the short wave direct radiation. They also suggested that LAI should not be less than 4 to intercept about 100% of the direct radiation for shading trees in a mid latitude location.

*Ulmus Americana* (American Elm), a specie which is commonly used in the Middle East as a street tree (Mahadin, 2001), was modelled in this study. The tree was 8 m high, which is appropriate for the urban design pattern of the IRA urban zone in Damascus, and a LAI of 4.6 was assumed during the summer. In winter on the other hand, 30% of the summer LAI values was assumed. This is because *Ulmus Americana* is a deciduous tree and it loses most of its leaves in winter. Because ENVI-met 3.1 does not include shading devices, a very dense horizontal layer of vegetation (LAI of 9) was used to model a shading device that totally blocks the solar radiation. The LAD and LAI values for the summer and winter seasons are shown in Table 2.

Table 2 Trees and shading devices used in the summer and winter simulations, where D is *Ulmus Americana* (American Elm)<sup>a</sup> and Sh is a very dense vegetation type used as shading device. LAI was calculated according to Eq. 1

	D (summer)	D (winter)	Sh
Height (m)	8	8	3
LAD 1	0.1	0.03	0
LAD 2	0.1	0.03	0
LAD 3	0.1	0.03	0
LAD 4	0.6	0.2	0
LAD 5	1	0.3	0
LAD 6	1	0.3	0
LAD 7	1	0.3	0
LAD 8	1	0.3	0
LAD 9	0.6	0.2	0
LAD10	0.3	0.1	30
LAD total	5.8	1.8	30
<b>LAI</b>	<b>4.6</b>	<b>1.5</b>	<b>9</b>

<sup>a</sup>*Ulmus Americana* (American Elm) is a tree that is commonly used in the Middle East. The maximum height can be 20 m. It is a deciduous tree and can be planted in tight places in urban areas. It can also be planted as a street tree. It prefers sunny conditions and therefore it can be used to provide shade (Mahadin, 2001).

## 3. Results

### 3.1. The effect of urban design on thermal comfort

Fig. 5 shows the PET index results at 14:00 for the E-W street orientation of the four studied cases including the base case. The figure illustrates that the urban space – pavements and the street – in the base case (Fig. 5a) is very stressful (PET is between 51 and 58 °C). When urban morphology is changed (Fig. 3b), the thermal comfort is improved for the southern pavement where PET is about 36 °C (Fig. 5b) because of the tall wall (7 m) that provides shade. In the case of trees on the pavements, thermal comfort has improved considerably both on the pavements and in the street space where PET is between 35 and 50 °C (Fig. 5c). In the case of using shading devices together with trees on the pavements, thermal comfort is improved significantly even more than the case of using only trees, and the PET varies between 32 °C under shade and 48 °C in the middle of the street (Fig. 5d). In addition, more shaded spaces were provided over the pavements for pedestrians needs. The results indicate that the last case (Fig. 5d) is clearly better than the other cases regarding outdoor thermal comfort. In addition, it is shown that the idea of using a mixture of shading devices and trees is a good strategy to have less stressful urban spaces.

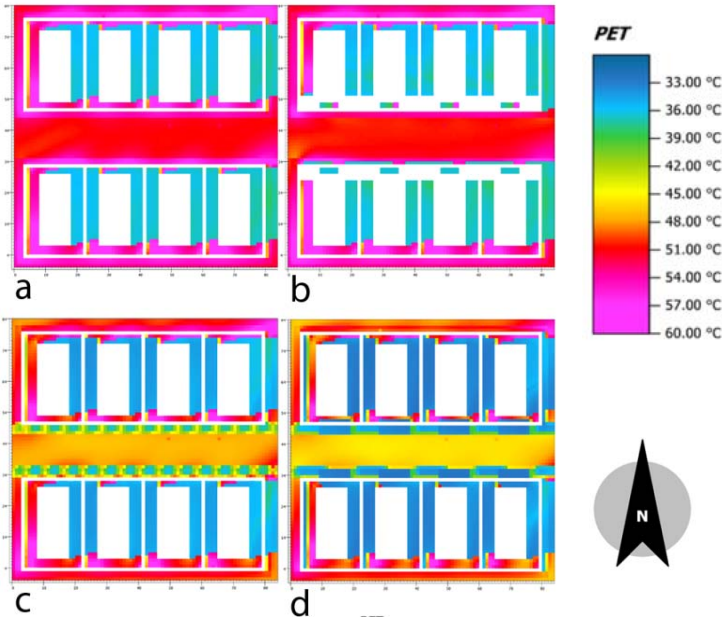


Fig. 5. Calculated PET at 14:00 for the E-W street orientation for (a) base case, (b) urban morphology, (c) vegetation and (d) vegetation and shading devices

### 3.2. The effect of street orientation and seasonal differences on thermal comfort

Fig. 6 shows the PET results of different street orientations for the case street trees and shading devices (best case) compared to the base case at 14:00 during the summer time. For the base case, the results show that N-S orientation is less stressful than E-W mainly for the west pavement (Fig. 6b) due to the shade created by the buildings. By using street trees and shading devices, both orientations are more comfortable than the base case although N-S is a bit more stressful than E-W, especially in the spaces between buildings where the E-W orientation provides plenty of shade due to the self shading. On the other hand, the street space – in both orientations – is less stressful when trees and shading devices are used over the pavements and this is because the trees and shading devices help to prevent the solar radiation to heat up the street when sun angles are low.

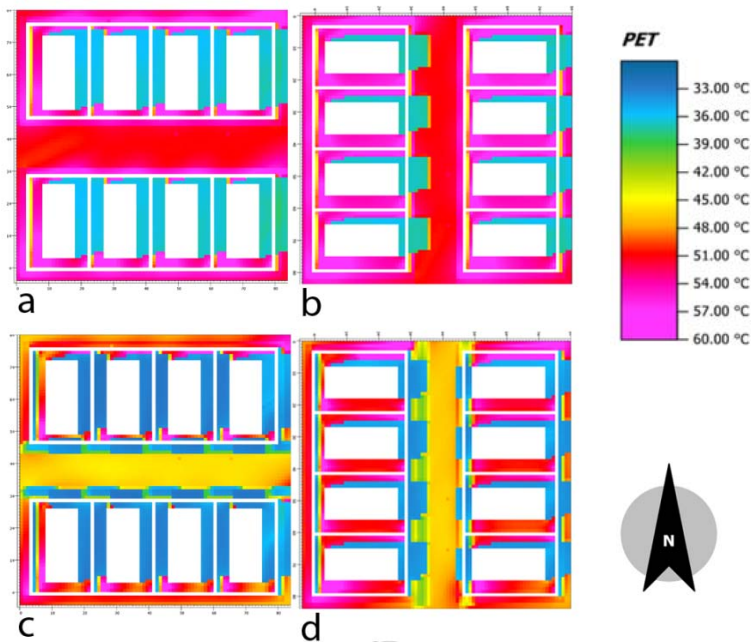


Fig. 6. The PET results of different street orientations at 14:00 during the summer time, where: (a) base case E-W, (b) base case N-S, (c) vegetation and shading devices E-W and (d) vegetation and shading devices N-S

Fig. 7 illustrates the  $OUT\_SET^*$  results of different street orientations for the case street trees and shading devices (best case) compared to the base case at 14:00 during the summer time. The result shows that  $OUT\_SET^*$  has the same tendency as PET (Fig. 6) regarding the thermal comfort although  $OUT\_SET^*$  values – for both orientations – are lower than PET values. The maximum PET value in the base case for both orientations (Fig. 6a,b) is about 58 °C, whereas it is about 41 °C for  $OUT\_SET^*$  (Fig. 7a,b). In the case of trees and shading devices, the maximum PET value for both orientations (Fig. 6a,b) is about 49 °C, whereas for  $OUT\_SET^*$  (Fig. 7a,b), it is about 36 °C.

In winter, the effect of street orientation and urban design on thermal comfort is completely different from the summer time. Fig. 8 and Fig. 9 show the PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  results respectively for different street orientations for the case street trees and shading devices (best case) compared to the base case at 14:00. The results illustrate that the main difference between E-W and N-S orientations for both PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  is that there is no significant difference in maximum temperature values in the base case as well as the case where trees and shading devices are added. The maximum PET value of the base case for E-W (Fig. 8a) is about 16 °C, whereas it is about 17 °C for N-S (Fig. 8b). When trees and shading devices are added, the maximum PET value for E-W and N-S (Fig. 8c, d) is about the same (15 °C). On the other hand, the maximum  $OUT\_SET^*$  value in the base case for E-W (Fig. 9a) is about 23 °C, whereas it is about 24 °C for N-S (Fig. 9b). When trees and shading devices are added, the maximum  $OUT\_SET^*$  value for E-W and N-S (Fig. 9c, d) is about the same (22 °C).

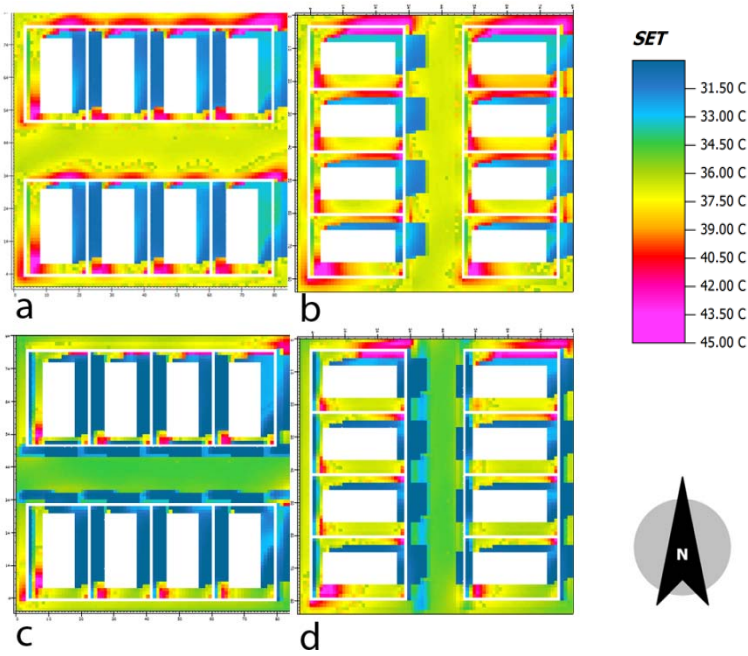


Fig. 7. The  $OUT\_SET^*$  results of different street orientations at 14:00 during the summer time, where: (a) base case E-W, (b) base case N-S, (c) vegetation and shading devices E-W and (d) vegetation and shading devices N-S

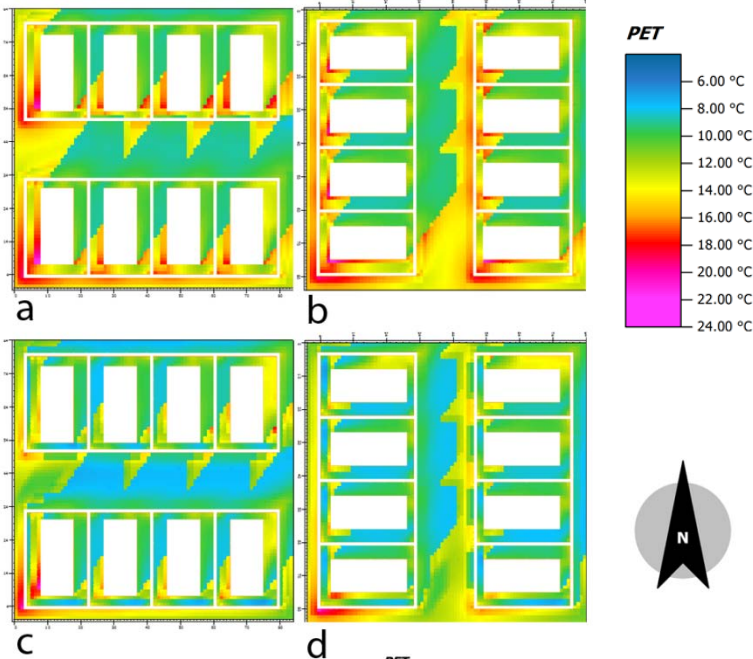


Fig. 8. The PET results of different street orientations at 14:00 during the winter time where: (a) base case E-W, (b) base case N-S, (c) vegetation and shading devices E-W and (d) vegetation and shading devices N-S

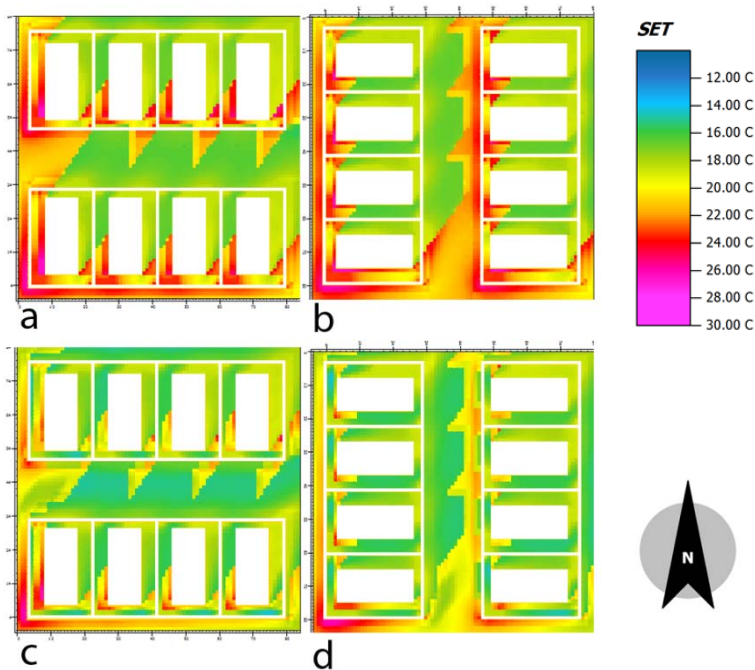


Fig. 9. The  $OUT\_SET^*$  results of different street orientations at 14:00 during the winter time where: (a) base case E-W, (b) base case N-S, (c) vegetation and shading devices E-W and (d) vegetation and shading devices N-S

### 3.3. Spatial and temporal variations of thermal comfort

Fig. 10 and Fig. 11 show the average values of PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  for the pedestrian zones A and B (Fig. 4) of different street orientations for the case street trees and shading devices (best case) at the hours 12:00, 14:00 and 16:00 in summer and winter respectively. The results show the same tendency of thermal comfort for PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$ . In summer, Fig. 10 reveals that N-S is the street orientation that shows the largest variation between the pavements. The most stressful zone is the eastern pavement (zone A) during the afternoon (14:00 and 16:00) with PET values 6–7 °C higher than for the western pavement (zone B). The corresponding  $OUT\_SET^*$  values are 2–3 °C higher. The reason is that in the afternoon, this side of the street receives high amounts of solar radiation due to the relatively low solar angles, which allow the radiation to penetrate under the tree crowns and shading devices. In the morning, when the solar radiation comes from east, the conditions are reversed, but the difference in temperature is much smaller (less than 1 °C for both PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$ ). For the E-W orientation, on the other hand, the northern pavement (zone A) is the most comfortable at 12:00 and 14:00 for both PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$ , whereas the southern pavement (zone B) is the most comfortable at 16:00, although the differences between the zones are small (less than 1 °C for both PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$ ). This is because zone A is protected against solar radiation in the early morning due to the shade that is created by buildings on the northern side of the street, whereas zone B receives solar radiation



due to low solar angles and the ground is heated up. In the late afternoon (16:00), zone A is heated up due to the low sun angle, which penetrates below the tree crowns and shading devices. In relation to the thermal comfort zones for Damascus found by Yahia & Johansson (2013b) – which reported upper thermal comfort limits in summer of 31.3 °C for both PET and OUT\_SET\* – the results for both pavements are clearly above the upper limit of PET (Fig. 10a), whereas only the eastern pavement of the N-S street has values clearly above the limit of OUT\_SET\* (Fig. 10b).

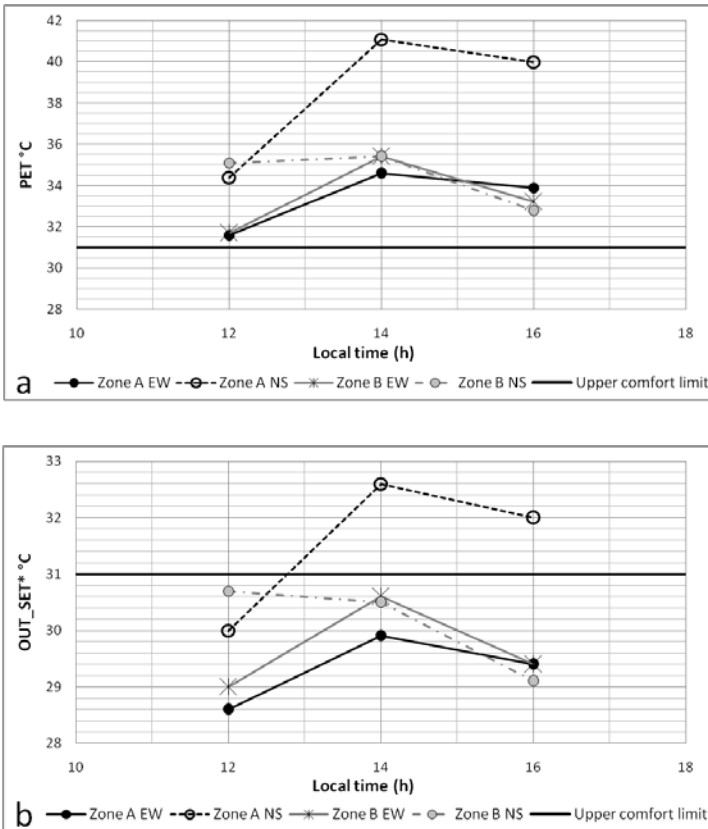


Fig. 10. The average values for (a) PET and (b) OUT\_SET\* of different street orientations using street trees and shading devices (best case) at hours 12:00, 14:00 and 16:00 in summer where the bold horizontal lines in (a) and (b) are the upper comfort limits in summer for PET and OUT\_SET\* respectively (Yahia & Johansson, 2013b)

In winter, Fig. 11 shows that for the N-S orientation the eastern pavement (zone A) is the warmest at 14:00, about 2.5 °C higher than zone B for both PET and OUT\_SET\*. This is due to the direct solar radiation that reaches this zone since the sun angle is much lower than in summer. On the other hand, the western pavement (zone B) is slightly warmer at 12:00. For the E-W orientation the northern pavement (zone A) is the warmest zone at both 12:00 and 14:00. This is because this zone receives solar radiation due to the low solar angles whereas the southern pavement (zone B) is in shade from buildings, trees and shading devices. The winter results indicate that

the hour 16:00 is the worst for both zones A and B since both zones are under shade because this hour is near the time of sunset in Damascus. In comparison with the thermal comfort zones for Damascus found by Yahia & Johansson (2013b) – which reported lower thermal comfort limits in winter of 21.0 °C for PET and 27.7 °C for OUT\_SET\* – the results for both pavements are clearly below the lower limit of both PET (Fig. 11a) and OUT\_SET\* (Fig. 11b), at least 8 °C lower for both indices.

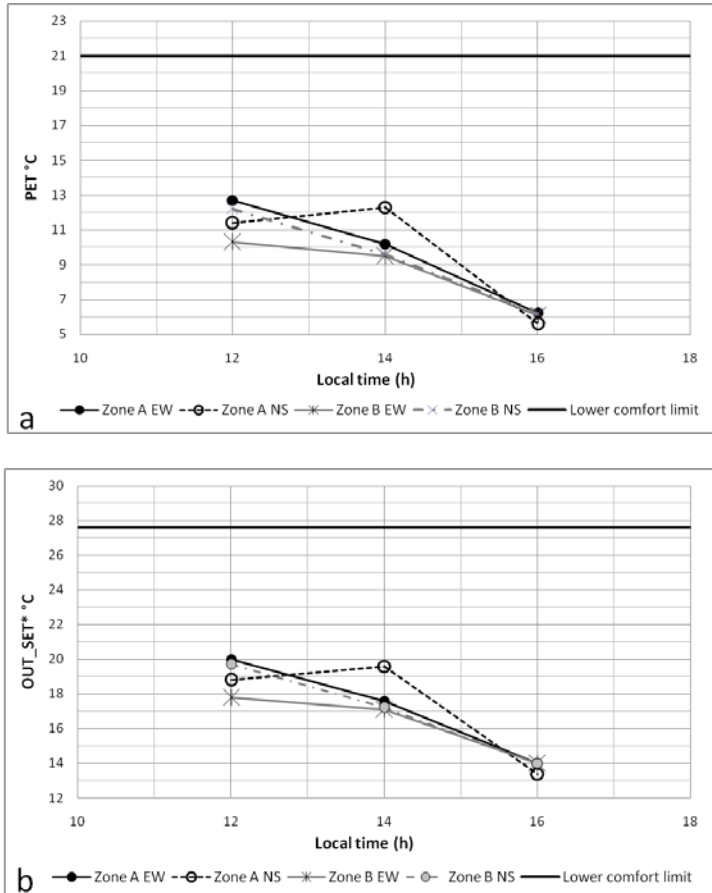


Fig. 11. The average values for (a) PET and (b) OUT\_SET\* of different street orientations using street trees and shading devices (best case) at hours 12:00, 14:00 and 16:00 in winter where the bold horizontal lines in (a) and (b) are the lower comfort limits in winter for PET and OUT\_SET\* respectively (Yahia & Johansson, 2013b)

Fig. 12 and Fig. 13 show the PET and OUT\_SET\* values for the entire area of zones A, B and C for the base and best cases for the summer, which is the most problematic season. For both indices there is a considerable thermal comfort improvement when street trees and shading devices are used. For PET, Fig. 12b shows that minimum and maximum values – for the case of trees and shading devices – are 30.2 °C and 49.4 °C respectively, whereas for the base case, the minimum and maximum values are 35.1 °C and 57.5 °C respectively (Fig. 12a). The most decisive improvement occurs

at 14:00 and 16:00 for the E-W orientation and the difference between the average PET values of the base and best cases is 10.5 °C at 12:00 and 14:00. The average values of PET are clearly above the upper limit of thermal comfort. However, the minimum values are slightly below or above this limit which shows that comfortable spots exist in the street space.

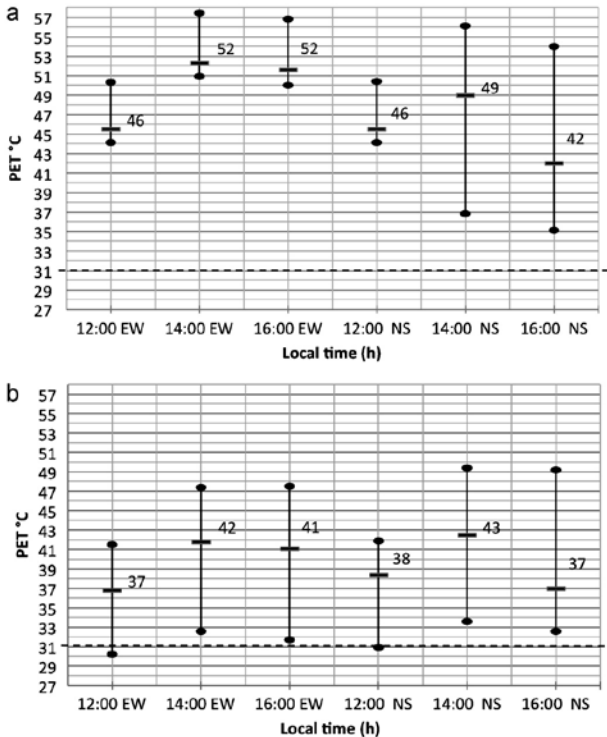


Fig. 12. The minimum, maximum and average values of PET for different street orientations in all studied zones A, B and C (Fig. 4) at 12:00, 14:00 and 16:00 during the summer time where (a) the base case, (b) the best case (street trees and shading devices) and the horizontal dotted line is the upper comfort limit in summer for PET (Yahia & Johansson, 2013b)

For OUT\_SET\* the tendency is the same as for PET, see Fig. 13. However, the values of OUT\_SET\* are closer to the thermal comfort limits and the difference between minimum and maximum values is, in general, lower. Fig. 13b shows that minimum and maximum values for the best case are 27.9 °C and 36.3 °C respectively, whereas the minimum and maximum values for the base case are 30.1 °C and 40.6 °C respectively (Fig. 13a). The most decisive improvement occurs also at 14:00 and 16:00 for the E-W orientation and the difference between the average OUT\_SET\* values of the base and best cases is 4.2 °C at 12:00 and 4.4 °C at 14:00. The average values of OUT\_SET\* are, with a few exceptions, a few °C above the upper limit of thermal comfort. However, all minimum values are clearly below this limit which shows that comfortable spots exist in the street space for all studied hours.

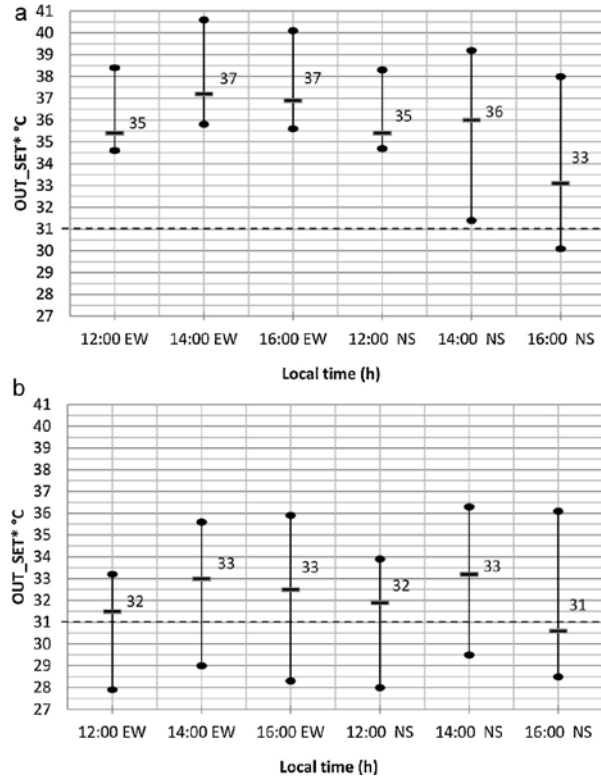


Fig. 13. The minimum, maximum and average values of  $OUT\_SET^*$  for different street orientations in all studied zones A, B and C (Fig. 4) at 12:00, 14:00 and 16:00 during the summer time where (a) the base case, (b) the best case (street trees and shading devices) and the horizontal dotted line is the upper comfort limit in summer for  $OUT\_SET^*$  (Yahia & Johansson, 2013b)

## 4. Discussion

### 4.1. The influence of street orientation on thermal comfort in summer and winter

This study deals with detached buildings which reflect the urban planning regulations in Damascus. For the street space and the pavement in summer at 14:00, the simulations show that the N-S street orientation of the base case is less stressful than E-W for both PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  (Figs. 6 and 7). This agrees with other studies of urban canyons which report that a N-S orientation is more comfortable than E-W (Ali-Toudert & Mayer, 2006; Johansson, 2006a). In contrast, the E-W orientation – for detached urban morphologies – is more comfortable than N-S in the case of the spaces between buildings (the side setbacks). This can be explained by the influence of the self-shading effect.

When trees and shading devices are added, the thermal comfort for both PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  is improved for both orientations. This agrees with other studies which report that the direct radiation under the tree canopy significantly decreases (Ochoa, Roset & Serra, 2009; Ali-Toudert & Mayer,

2007). Conversely, the study also shows that for the best case (street trees and shading devices) the E-W orientation is slightly less stressful than N-S at street level (Fig. 6 and Fig. 7). Thus, when proper horizontal shading is provided the street orientation is less important. This agrees with Yahia & Johansson (2013a) who argued that for streets with detached buildings in Damascus there is only a weak influence of street orientation and aspect ratio but a strong influence of vegetation on surface temperatures and outdoor thermal comfort. In addition, the lateral spaces between buildings (as a result of the side setbacks) are more comfortable for the E-W orientation than for the N-S due to the self shading created by the buildings (Fig. 6 and Fig. 7). Thus, this study shows that the effect of street orientation on outdoor thermal comfort for detached buildings does not only affect the street space, but also affects the spaces between buildings. Consequently, in order to improve the thermal environment of detached urban morphologies, all spaces – including the streets and the spaces between buildings – must be taken into account in the urban and landscape design processes.

In winter, the N-S orientation is more comfortable in the early afternoon than E-W for the base case, at least the eastern pavement (Fig. 8b and Fig. 9b). For the E-W orientation, the building geometry affects the radiation and creates a shade which partly covers the northern pavement (Fig. 8a and Fig. 9a). The best case follows the same pattern although there is much more shade than in the base case due to the trees and the shading devices. The great improvement in summer for the best case thus implies slightly worsened conditions during winter.

## 4.2. Relation to thermal comfort limits

Since people adapt to the thermal conditions they are exposed to, the thermal comfort zone varies from one city to another. This has been confirmed by many studies which have determined the thermal comfort zone in different cities for different thermal indices such as PET of the urban parks of Cairo (Mahmoud, 2011), PET of subtropical Taiwan (Lin, 2009; Lin & Matzarakis, 2008),  $OUT\_SET^*$  of subtropical Taiwan (Lin et al., 2011) and PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  of Damascus (Yahia & Johansson, 2013b). In this study the simulated results are compared with the thermal comfort limits for PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  found in the latter study, see Table 3.

Table 3 Lower and upper comfort limits for PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  during summer and winter in the hot dry city of Damascus according to Yahia & Johansson (2013b)

Index	Comfort range limits (°C)		
	Acceptability (%)	Lower limit Winter	Upper limit Summer
PET	80	21.0	31.3
$OUT\_SET^*$	80	27.6	31.3

In summer, the PET values of the best case were clearly above the upper comfort limit (31 °C), see Fig. 10a, whereas the  $OUT\_SET^*$  values were mainly below the upper comfort limit (31 °C), see Fig. 10b. However, it should be noted that the calculated PET and  $OUT\_SET^*$  values in Figs. 10–13 are average values and thus there are many spots within the pedestrian

zones where comfort limits are reached, see Figs. 6c, d and 7c, d. This study thus confirms that it is possible – for both E-W and N-S street orientations – to achieve the comfort limits during the warmest hours (at 12:00, 14:00 and 16:00 LT) during the summer which is the most problematic season, see Fig. 14 as an example at 14:00.

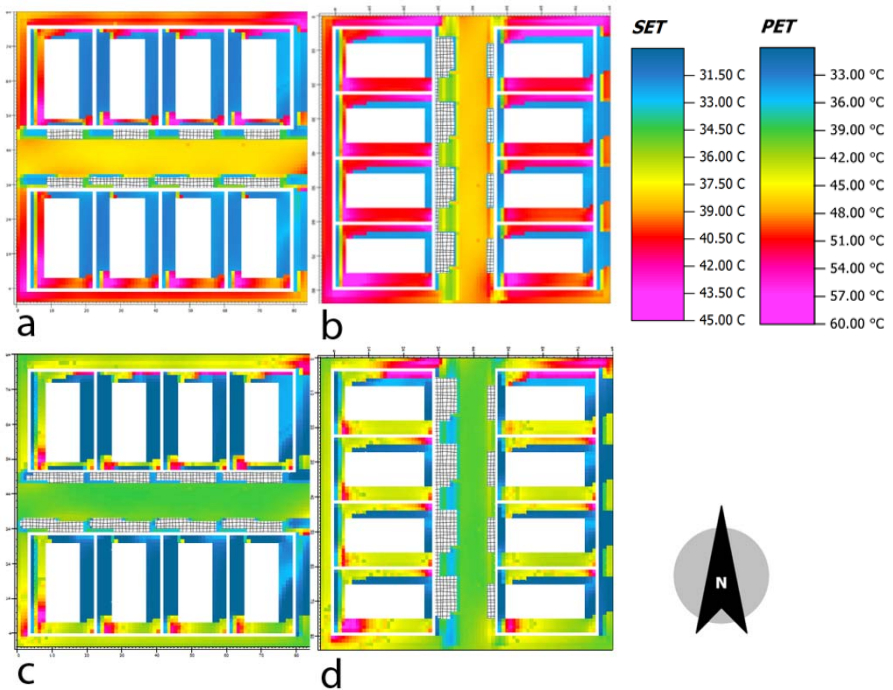


Fig. 14. The comfortable spots (the hatched areas) at the street space for the case vegetation and shading devices in different street orientations at 14:00 during the summer time where: (a) PET E-W, (b) PET N-S, (c) OUT\_SET\* E-W and (d) OUT\_SET\* N-S

In winter, however, the thermal comfort values were well below the limit (Fig. 10b and Fig. 11b). It should be noted, however, that the winter period is short compared to the summer season and that people are able to improve their thermal comfort by using heavier clothing. Moreover, as mentioned above, the values in Figs. 10–13 are average values and thus there are many spots within the pedestrian zones which are closer to the comfort limits, see Figs. 8c, d and 9c, d. In order to approach the winter thermal limit, flexible landscape elements could be used such as shading devices that can be modified or regulated in winter to allow more direct radiation. Similarly, using deciduous trees, which is done in this study, or grape vines, will allow the solar radiation in winter to reach the ground and heat up the air whereas during the summer the vegetation will block the direct radiation. Another strategy to improve winter conditions is to provide open public spaces, e.g. small squares and parks within the residential areas.

### 4.3. Comparison of the PET and OUT\_SET\* indices

This study investigates the effect of landscape, seasonal differences and street orientation on thermal comfort by using two different thermal indices, PET and OUT\_SET\*. In general, the study shows that they demonstrate the same tendency although they differ in magnitude and in the relation to their thermal comfort limits (Figs. 10–13) as discussed above. The difference in magnitude between the two indices can be explained by the fact that although PET and OUT\_SET\* have the same meteorological input data, they use different equations to calculate the thermal conditions. In addition, PET uses fixed values for clothing and activity, whereas OUT\_SET\* was calculated using realistic values for Damascus as input data (see Section 2.6). Therefore, OUT\_SET\* is more suitable in the hot dry climate since it has large yearly variations and thus the clothing and activity levels vary a lot between the different seasons. Moreover, OUT\_SET\* has proven to have a better correlation with thermal perception and thermal acceptability than PET in this climate (Yahia & Johansson, 2013b). If, however, the purpose of the study is to examine and evaluate the effect of landscape on the built environment independently of people's perceptions, the urban designers and planners can use PET.

### 4.4. Landscaping and urban planning regulations

This study highlights the importance of creating landscape tools and polices to be linked with urban planning regulations in the city. Such strategies will affect the master plan and urban regulations in terms of spaces between buildings, setbacks, street widths, etc. These and other strategies are needed to reach more sustainable cities in harmony with climatic needs. One of these tools is the Green Plot Ratio (GPR) suggested by Ong (2003) which is defined as the average LAI of the greenery on a site. GPR allows a more precise regulation of greenery on a site without excluding a corresponding portion of the site from building development. Although this concept provides flexibility to the designer while simultaneously protecting the green quota in the design, it does not recognize the 3D dimension since it only treats the amount of greenery per surface area. The GPR does not specify the type of vegetation, i.e. whether it is grass, bushes, trees etc, which will strongly affect the shading of the site. Another study by (Ng et al., 2012) conducted simulations to investigate the required percentage of greenery (green coverage ratio) in the urban environment to create cooling. However, this study concentrated on the effect of the air temperature and did not take the 3D dimension of vegetation and landscape elements into account. Therefore, there is a future need to investigate the role of vegetation and landscape elements from a shading point of view and to create realistic links with urban regulations in the city to be applied in practice especially in terms of the 3D form of trees and other landscape elements.

## 5. Conclusions

This study investigated the effect of vegetation and landscape elements on outdoor thermal comfort for detached buildings in Damascus, Syria.

The study shows that urban morphology, orientation and vegetation strongly affect the street design. Moreover, it was shown that the effect of street orientation on outdoor thermal comfort for detached buildings does not only affect the street space, but also affects the lateral spaces between buildings. In order to improve the thermal environment of detached buildings, all spaces – including the streets and the spaces between buildings – must be taken into account in urban and landscape design processes.

By using vegetation and landscape elements, it is possible to achieve the comfort limits during the warmest hours (at 12:00, 14:00 and 16:00 LT) for both E-W and N-S street orientations in the summer which is the most problematic season. However, in winter the thermal comfort values were found to be lower than the comfort limit. It is suggested to use flexible landscape elements such as moveable shading devices or deciduous vegetation to allow solar radiation to reach the ground.

This study showed that PET and OUT\_SET\* have the same tendency, however the OUT\_SET\* values were closer to thermal comfort, especially in summer. If the aim is to examine how comfortable an urban design proposal is, OUT\_SET\*, which takes clothing and activity into account, is recommended. If only a relative comparison of different alternatives is needed, then it is also possible to use PET.

This article highlights the importance of creating landscape tools and policies to be linked with the urban planning regulations of the city. Such strategies will help to reach more sustainable cities in harmony with climatic needs. This should be done by investigating the role of vegetation and landscape elements from a shading point of view taking the 3D form of trees and other landscape elements into account.

The ENVI-met simulations pointed out the need to consider microclimatic requirements in the urban design and planning processes and showed the importance of a climate smart urban design. Moreover, it illustrated how to develop the thermal environment for the case of detached buildings which is a common urban form in Damascus. It is thus an advantage to use ENVI-met simulations in the field of urban design and planning to evaluate different urban design proposals.

Although the results of this study are limited to the city of Damascus and only dealt with the IRA urban zone, containing only detached buildings, the recommendations can be applied for other cities in hot dry regions. Such strategies will provide a common base towards creating standards to use in future studies in hot dry climates regarding the methodologies and approaches to investigate the thermal environments and creating a comfortable microclimate.



## References

- Akbari, H., Pomerantz, M., & Taha, H. (2001). Cool Surfaces and Shade Trees to Reduce Energy Use and Improve Air Quality in Urban Areas. *Solar Energy*, 70 (3), 295–310. [http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/S0038-092X\(00\)00089-X](http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/S0038-092X(00)00089-X).
- Ali-Toudert, F., & Mayer, H. (2006). Numerical Study on the effects of aspect ratio and orientation on an urban street canyon on outdoor thermal comfort in hot and dry climate. *Build Environ*, 41, 94–108. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/j.buildenv.2005.01.013>.
- Ali-Toudert, F., & Mayer, H. (2007). Effects of asymmetry, galleries, overhanging facades and vegetation on thermal comfort in urban street canyons. *Solar Energy*, 81, 742–754. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/j.solener.2006.10.007>.
- Al-Kodmany, K. (1999). Privacy: traditional and modern architecture and urban design. *Urban Design*, 4, 283–312. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1080/13574809908724452>
- Arnold, H.F. (Ed.). (1980). *Trees in urban design*. New York - Van Nostrand Reinhold
- Berkovic, S., Yezioro, A., & Bitan, A. (2012). Study of thermal comfort in courtyards in a hot arid climate. *Solar Energy*, 86, 1173–1186. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/j.solener.2012.01.010>.
- Brown, R. (2010). *Design with Microclimate: The Secret to Comfortable Outdoor Space*. Washington DC - Island press.
- Bruse, M. (2009). ENVI-met simulation program. Retrieved December 18, 2009 from - <http://www.envi-met.com>.
- Bruse, M., & Fleer, H. (1998). Simulating surface-plant-air interactions inside urban environments with a three dimensional numerical model. *Environmental Modelling & Software*, 13, 373–384. [http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/S1364-8152\(98\)00042-5](http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/S1364-8152(98)00042-5).
- Chow, W.T.L., & Brazel, A.J. (2012). Assessing xeriscaping as a sustainable heat island mitigation approach for a desert city. *Build Environ*, 47, 170–181. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/j.buildenv.2011.07.027>.
- Eliasson, I. (2000). The use of climate knowledge in urban planning. *Landscape and Urban Planning*, 48, 31–44. [http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/S0169-2046\(00\)00034-7](http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/S0169-2046(00)00034-7).
- Fahmy, M., & Sharples, S. (2009). On the development of an urban passive thermal comfort system in Cairo, Egypt. *Build Environ*, 44, 1907–1916. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/j.buildenv.2009.01.010>.
- Fahmy, H., Sharples, S., & Yahia, M. (2010). LAI based trees selection for mid latitude urban developments: a microclimatic study in Cairo, Egypt. *Build Environ*, 45, 345–357. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/j.buildenv.2009.06.014>.
- Fountain, M.E., & Huizenga, C. (1994). Using the ASHRAE thermal comfort tool. An ASHRAE Special Publication, ASHRAE, Atlanta.
- Höppe, P. (1999). The physiological equivalent temperature – a universal index for the assessment of the thermal environment. *Int. J. Biometeorol*, 43, 71–75. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1007/s004840050118>.
- Johansson, E. (2006a). Influence of urban geometry on outdoor thermal comfort in a hot dry climate: a study in Fez, Morocco. *Build Environ*, 41, 1326–1338. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/j.buildenv.2005.05.022>.
- Johansson, E. (2006b). *Urban design and outdoor thermal comfort in warm climates – studies in Fez and Colombo* (PhD dissertation). Lund, Sweden. Department of Housing Development & Management, Lund University.

- Kotzen, B. (2003). An investigation of shade under six different tree species of the Negev desert towards their potential use for enhancing micro-climatic conditions in landscape architectural development. *J Arid Environ*, 55, 231–274. [http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/S0140-1963\(03\)00030-2](http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/S0140-1963(03)00030-2).
- Law, B.E., Cescatti, A., & BAaldocchi, D.D. (2001). Leaf area distribution and radiative transfer in open-canopy forests: implications for mass and energy exchange. *Tree Physiol*, 21, 777–787. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1093/treephys/21.12-13.777>.
- Lin, T.P., & Matzarakis, A. (2008). Tourism climate and thermal comfort in Sun Moon Lake, Taiwan. *Int J Biometeorol*, 52 (4), 281–290. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1007/s00484-007-0122-7>.
- Lin, T.P. (2009). Thermal perception, adaption and attendance in a public square in hot and humid regions. *Build Environ*, 44, 2017–2026. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/j.buildenv.2009.02.004>.
- Lin, T.P., de Dear, R., & Hwang, R.L. (2011). Effect of thermal adaptation on seasonal outdoor thermal comfort. *Int J Climatol*, 31, 302–312. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1002/joc.2120>.
- Mahadin, K.O. (2001). Landscape plants for Jordan and the Middle East. Jordan – M.K. associates.
- Mahmoud, A.H.A. (2011). Analysis of the microclimatic and human comfort conditions in an urban park in hot and arid regions. *Build Environ*, 46, 2641–2656. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/j.buildenv.2011.06.025>.
- Matzarakis, A., Rutz, F., & Mayer, H. (2007). Modelling radiation fluxes in simple and complex environments – application of the RayMan model. *Int. J. Biometeorol*, 51, 323–334. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1007/s00484-006-0061-8>.
- Matzarakis, A., & Mayer, H. (1996). Another kind of environmental stress: thermal stress. WHO Colloborating Centre for Air Quality Management and Air Pollution Control. Newsletters 18, 7–10.
- Meir, P., Grace, J., & Miranda, A.C. (2000). Photographic method to measure the vertical distribution of leaf area density in forests. *Agric For Meteorol*, 102, 105–111. [http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/S0168-1923\(00\)00122-2](http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/S0168-1923(00)00122-2).
- Ng, E., Chen, L., Wang, Y., & Yuan, C. (2012). A study on the cooling effects of the greening in a high- density city: An experience from Hong Kong. *Build Environ*, 47, 256–271. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/j.buildenv.2011.07.014>.
- Ochoa, J. M., Roset, J., & Serra, R. (2009). Vegetation influences on the human thermal comfort in outdoor spaces. Retrieved July16, 2013, from School of Architecture of Barcelona, Department of Constructions Arquitectòniques I and Department of Física Aplicada – <http://www-fa.upc.es/personals/jroset/lyonvege.html>.
- Ong, B.L. (2003). Green plot ratio: an ecological measure for architecture and urban planning. *Landscape and urban planning*, 63, 197–211. [http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/S0169-2046\(02\)00191-3](http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/S0169-2046(02)00191-3).
- Pickup, J., & de Dear, R. (2000). An outdoor thermal comfort index (OUT\_SET\*) Part I – The model and its assumptions. In: de Dear R et al. (Eds.) *Biometeorology and urban climatology at the turn of the millennium* (pp. 71–98). World Meteorological Organization- Sydney.
- Shahidan, M.F., Salleh, E., & Shariff, K.M. (2007). Effects of Tree canopies on solar radiation filtration in a tropical microclimatic environment. In: *The 24th conference on passive and low energy architecture*, Singapore 22–24 November,

2007. Available online from the organization Passive & Low Energy Architecture (PLEA) – <http://www.plea-arch.org/ARCHIVE/2007/html/pdf/P0282.pdf>.
- Shashua-Bar, L., Pearlmutter, D., & Evyatar, E. (2011). The influence of trees and grass on outdoor thermal comfort in a hot-arid environment. *Int. J. Climatol*, 31, 1498–1506. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1002/joc.2177>.
- Trowbridge, P.J., & Bassuk, N.L. (2004). *Trees in the urban landscape; site assessment, design and installation*. New Jersey - John Wiley & Sons Inc.
- Yahia, M.W., & Johansson, E. (2013a). Influence of urban planning regulations on the microclimate in a hot dry climate: The example of Damascus, Syria. *Housing and the Built Environment*, 28 (1), 51–65. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1007/s10901-012-9280-y>.
- Yahia, M.W., & Johansson, E. (2013b). Evaluating the behaviour of different thermal indices by investigating various outdoor urban environments in the hot dry city of Damascus, Syria. *Int. J. Biometeorol*, 57(4), 615–630. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1007/s00484-012-0589-8>.
- Yahia, M.W. (2012). *Urban Microclimate and Thermal Comfort of Urban Spaces in Hot Dry Damascus: Influence of urban design and planning regulations* (Licentiate dissertation). Lund, Sweden. Department of Housing Development & Management, Lund University.

